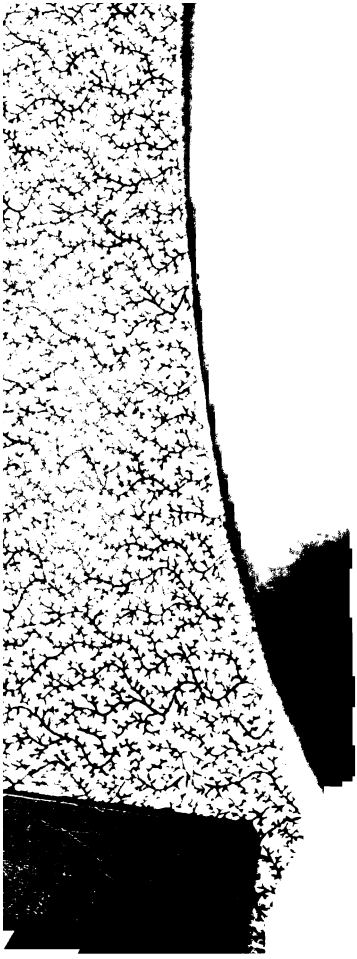

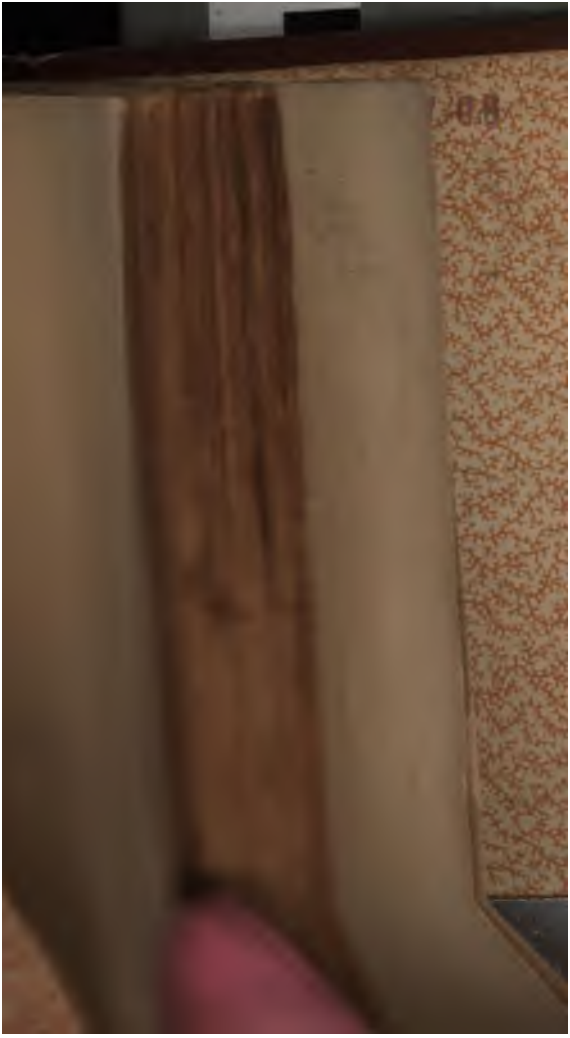

S. Augustus Holly.

T. A. Holly 1819

CHRYSAL;

OR, THE

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA:

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES,

WITH

CURIOUS AND INTERESTING ANECDOTES

OF THE

MOST NOTED PERSONS IN EVERY RANK OF LIFE,

WHOSE HANDS IT PASSED THROUGH, IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY,

AND PORTUGAL.

..... Held the Mirror up to nature,
To show vice its own image, virtue his own likeness,
And the very age and body of the times
His form and pressure. *Shakspeare.*

Qui capit, ille facit.

Charles Irvington

BY AN ADEPT.

FROM THE SECOND ENLARGED AND CORRECTED EDITION.

VOL. I.

NEW-YORK:
PUBLISHED BY D. HUNTINGTON.
A. PAUL, PRINTER.

1816.

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

WILLIAM PITT, ESQ.

&c. &c. &c.

SIR,

THE Publisher of these papers is sensible, that the time devoted to the care of nations is too valuable to be spared to the perusal of them; yet he should think himself guilty of a breach of the general gratitude, which, at this time, swells every honest heart in Britain, if he omitted to lay, at your feet, a work, in which every occasion of displaying the blessings of a good administration appears to have been sought with pleasure, and dwelt upon with judgment.

The genius of my author was evidently so averse to adulation, that it would be doing him the severest injustice, to join any thing to his work, which even envy could possibly pervert to such a motive, by insinuating, that the pictures he draws, in many places, of national good conduct, and the happy effects of it, are a panegyric on present, not a representation of imaginary scenes.

A sense of this precludes me from the pleasure of illustrating his remarks with particular instances; but, in return for that painful self-denial, I must be indulged in a profession of the joy, with which I (as must every Br[illegible]ton, whose heart feels for his country) congratulate [illegible]

self, on my happy fate, in living under an administr tion, in which the flights of imagination of a visionar recluse, dead so many years ago, may be taken for a r lation of the real events of the present times.

Here my address to *Mr. Pitt* must stop! But nothir can ever stop my prayers to Heaven for the preservati and happiness of a life, on whose labours, the welfar not only of this mighty empire, but also of the great part of Europe, do now so eminently depend.

A BRITON.

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE very favourable reception, which the former edition of this work, mutilated and imperfect as it was, met with from the public, has encouraged the editor to use every possible means, for the recovery of the rest of the manuscript.

Such an attempt was necessarily tedious, troublesome, and expensive, in going to all the customers of the chandler's shop, where it was first met with, prevailing upon them to search cup-boards, holes, and corners, wherever they might possibly have laid up any thing that was wrapped in it, and purchasing the scraps which could be found; for such an inquiry made them naturally imagine, that the papers were of some considerable value, and of course demand an extravagant price for them.

His own trouble and expense he thinks well rewarded, by the many most curious and interesting parts of the work, which he had the good fortune to recover; and he hopes the public will excuse the unavoidable delay of this impression, on the same account.

The parts, thus recovered, he has inserted in their proper places, without any ostentatious mark of note; and though they amount to very near a third part of the whole, as it now stands, and would have been amply sufficient to have made another volume; to evince the sincerity of his grateful desire to give pleasure to his readers, and acquit himself of all suspicion of mercenary design, he has added them to this edition, by printing it in a smaller letter than the former, and by that means avoided enhancing the price.

He had flattered himself, that the candid account of the manner in which this work came into his hands, which he prefixed to the former edition, would have obviated every insinuation of its being levelled at particular characters; but every puny critic was so fond of showing his sagacity, by finding out resemblances, and so zealous in support of his conjectures, that the editor's honest intention was in a great measure disappointed.

The disingenuity and absurdity of this is evident! I painting a number of faces, though merely from artist's imagination, if he designs well, and imitates

ture with judgment, it is impossible but many f will have a likeness to many persons, whom he m never seen or thought of, as they are all drawn fr same prototype with theirs.

This is the reason of the resemblance between p lar persons; and as justly might it be said, tha ever this appears, the parties must be brothers, in a general description of nature, every featu happens to resemble any particular person, was from him.

Between these accidental resemblances of natu the designed ones of art, there is always this diff that the latter bear in every part, whereas the ot only upon one or two particular features. Th GARTH, *or* HONE, *shall take off such a likene only of the features and shape, but also of the sentimental expression of the whole face and that the nicest eye shall not find the least differe tween the work of the pencil, and that of the hand here; whereas there never was such a resemblance two instances of the latter, that there was not so ference, that immediately and essentially distin them from each other.*

This, invariably just observation, will, to every mind, vindicate this work from the most distant tion, of aiming at particular characters, as in semblances, which have been most confidently there are many features so utterly unlike, many ences so essentially irreconcileable with the fanci ginals, that the injustice of such a charge must in appear.

This is another proof of this performance work of mere imagination, which will scarce be d by those who may not attend to the force of this ing, just and conclusive as it is; which is, that published a considerable time before many of the which it seems most particularly to describe, hap such for instance, as the attempt of the Dutch in the forbidding to attempt influencing parlian elections, and many others, which, the judicious must be sensible, there was not the least reason the most distant expectation of.

PREFACE

TO THE FIRST DUBLIN EDITION.

TO acquit myself of the suspicion of presuming to aim at particular characters in the following work, should any fancied likeness be thought to direct any application, as well as to do justice to the real author of it; I think it my duty to make known the manner by which it happened to come into my hands.

As I was walking one morning, last summer, along White-Chapel, I was obliged to take shelter from a shower of rain in a cottage near the turnpike. The family were at breakfast, at their tea, and, as the rain continued, I had leisure to reflect on the advantages of commerce, which thus, in a manner, joins the opposite extremities of the earth, by bringing their products together: at the same time, that the variety in the equipage of the tea-table, or indeed, stool, on which "there was nothing of a piece," suggested a just ridicule on the vanity of luxury.

This last reflection was extended to all the pursuits of man, on the sight of a piece of written paper, that served instead of a plate to hold their butter,—"Who knows (thought I) but the writer of this bestowed time and care upon it, and promised himself both profit and fame, in reward of his labour?"

This thought prompted curiosity to look at the paper, which, by this time, was scraped quite clean. I therefore, after a few words of conversation, to introduce my request, desired leave to see it, which was readily granted; when I was surprised to find my conjectures, as I imagined, confirmed, by its appearing to be [illegible] regular work.

Curiosity had now a stronger motive than idle gratification! I asked where they had got that paper; and on their telling me, at the chandler's shop next door, though this discouraged me a good deal, I resolved to pursue my inquiry, and went to the shop, as if for some snuff, which, as I expected, was given me on a piece of the same paper.

The rain still giving me a pretence for delaying there, I entered into discourse with the woman, and, among other idle questions, asked her where she usually got paper to wrap her wares in, to which she answered, "Sometimes from the public offices, and sometimes from the booksellers and printers; and, when she was disappointed at those places, she was forced to buy brown paper, which was much dearer; though, at present, she made use of some old stuff that had lain a great while lumbering her garret, having belonged to a lodger of her mother's, who died many years ago."

I then changed the discourse, for fear she should perceive my design; but presently seeing her going to tear more, for somebody else that came in, I could not forbear any longer, but offered her brown paper for all the written paper she had, as that was most proper for some work I designed, which she readily agreed to, and sold me her whole stock for eighteen pence.

This adventure put an end to my walk; so I took the first coach that went by, and hurried home to examine my purchase, which I found to consist of a number of fragments, upon various subjects, whether originally left unfinished, or torn thus in the chandler's shop, it was impossible to say: and, among the rest, the following work, which seemed to have undergone a different, though not much better fate, being blotted in many places, often paragraphs, and sometimes whole pages being erased; and, what was worst, this havoc was made in the most curious and entertaining part of the whole, the philosophy of the nature and agency of spirits.

The oddity of this collection made me resolve to try if I could learn any thing of the author, from the woman of the shop where I had made my purchase; accordingly, I called upon her one evening, as if merely by accident, and sending for a pint of wine, to set her tongu

a going, I no sooner hinted my desire, than she directly gave me the following account, which I shall repeat as nearly as possible, in her own words, shortening it only of expletive exclamations and repetitions.

"My father (said she) dying young, and leaving his family but poorly, my mother took this shop to help her to bring up three children, of whom I, the eldest, was but five years old. The times being hard, she was obliged to make every honest shift, and therefore took in lodgers, and, among the rest, an elderly man who rented the garret to sleep in, and a little turret in the garden, which he fitted up for himself for a work-shop: but what business he followed she never knew, as he let nobody see him at work; nor did she trouble herself to inquire, as he always paid her punctually: but she imagined he was a smith of some sort, from the quantities of charcoal he burned, and the constant blowing of his bellows.

"In this place he spent all his time, often not quitting it for whole days and nights together, till hunger has forced him to crawl like a starved rat out of his hole, to get a bit of victuals.

"At first my mother was uneasy at this, and imagined he must be out of his mind, or troubled in conscience, she spoke about him to a worthy gentleman, a clergyman, that lived in the neighbourhood; but he coming to see him at a time when he had a clean shirt on, and had eat his victuals, and slept regularly for some time before, his discourse was so sensible and pleasant, that the doctor could not help telling him the cause of his visit, as a joke, at my mother, to whom he said, when he was going away, that so far from being mad, he believed her lodger was the best scholar in the whole parish.

"My mother's good-nature had like to have lost her her lodger; for as soon as the doctor was gone, he gave her warning; but upon her promising never to be guilty of the like indiscretion again, nor to trouble herself any further about him than just to give him what he should call for, he consented to stay.

"Thus that time he lived among us as unnoticed as he could desire, following his business without disturb-

ance from any one, nor appearing to give himself the least trouble about that of any other person living, except it was me, whom he taught to read, and said he would make his heir. An unhappy heirship, I am sure for me; for it hindered my marrying Jack Twist the rope-maker, who is now the toppingest man in all Ratcliff-highway, and then offered to take me in my shift.

"But there's no help for that now! Luck is all! To be sure we thought he must be some extraordinary man, for he never wanted money, and then we used to hear him talking to himself sometimes, as if all the world was his own, of building colleges, churches, and houses, and altering St. Paul's, and I do not know what great things; and, one day in particular, I remember he said before us all, that, before seven years, he would hire an army, that should drive the pope and the devil (Lord bless us) out of Rome; for to be sure, he would talk before us, as if we could not hear him, as we would also do any thing before him, as freely as if he was a cat or a dog! Well, as I was saying, it was no wonder, to be sure, that such ignorant poor folks as we, should think much of him, especially after what the doctor said, and accordingly built great hopes upon his promises.

"He went on thus for near twenty years, no soul ever coming near him, nor he going out, above once or twice in a year, and then not staying above an hour or two at a time.

"At length his health began to break very much, which made my mother often speak to him not to work so hard, for he had been with us so long, and was so quiet, and paid so honestly, that we all loved him as if he was our father. But her advice was all to no purpose; he still went on, bidding her not trouble herself, nor be afraid about him. But this did not satisfy her; and one day, when he had been locked up, from the morning before, without having any victuals, or going to bed, she resolved to break through his orders, and call him to dinner.

When she came to the turret, which he called his *laboratory*, she tapped gently at the door, but receiving *no answer*, nor hearing any noise within, she was *frighted*, that she called me, to fetch the kitchen pok

with which we made a shift to force it open, when we found the poor man stretched at his length upon the floor, to all appearance dead.

"This shocked us greatly; but we did not alarm the neighbours, as we imagined there were things of value there, that might be misplaced, or taken away in the confusion: we therefore raised him up ourselves, and after a little while, perceiving signs of life, carried him in, and laid him in our own bed, and pouring some drops into his mouth and nose, at length brought him to himself; when his first care was to inquire for the key of the turret, and whether any one else had been there, or any thing in it stirred: our answers satisfying him, he seemed quite easy, and in a little time recovered, to all appearance as well as ever.

"From this time, he changed his way of life a good deal; and though he was much in the turret, which we observed, he ever after called his study, and not his laboratory, he never sat up whole nights in it, as before, nor bought any more charcoal, nor even oil for his lamp, but went to bed orderly when we did.

"But this change came too late, for, about six months after, we found him one morning dead in his bed; though he had been as cheery in the evening before, as he had for a long time.

"This was a great surprise and concern to us! But what avails grief? we must all die, and he was a very old man. As soon as we were certain that he was dead, the first thing my mother and I did, was to go to the turret, impatient enough to take possession of our heirship; where, Lord help our poor heads! what did we find? only a few great old books, and those papers you got; the very bellows, and tools, and pots that we saw there before, being all gone, and no more sign of a workshop to be seen, than if it was not the same place we had been in but six months before. What he could have done with his things we could not imagine, for we never observed him to carry them out, so that we concluded he must have burned them.

"This was a sore disappointment to me, not to mention the loss to my mother, to whom he owed a quarter's rent, besides an account of near twenty shillings in the shop; and seven shillings and two-pence half-penny w

all the money in his pocket; nor did we ever find a penny more after him, though we searched enough!—Well! patience is a remedy for all things, but death! We were forced to submit; though I cannot help grieving, when I think of it, to this day, especially when I see Peg Sprout, the green-woman's daughter from Wapping, that Jack Twist married out of despair, when I refused him, ride by, in her chaise, like a lady; and it is now thirty years ago!—No let me see! it will be exactly twenty-nine years come next Michaelmas; I am sure I have reason to remember it well, for my poor mother took it so to heart, that she never held up her head after, till it finished her, in about nine years; though I cannot say but something else might have helped, for she took cruelly to drinking drams, though as she began it, to comfort her for this misfortune, it was all owing to that, and poor sister Bett, too."—

I was obliged to interrupt her here, by asking her, what kind of a person he was, or she would have gone on to give me the history of her whole family, to which she answered thus, "What sort of man? I'll tell you, then: for I think I see him before my eyes, this minute. He was a tall thin man, above six feet high, and no thicker than a watchman's staff, as I may say; then his constant leaning over his work bent his long back like a bow, especially as he had no belly to keep it up, for he lived almost upon nothing, so that, when he walked, the length of his legs, and his great stoop, made him look as if he had no body at all. As for his face, it was as long as my arm, and not broader than the edge of my hand; his eyes were sunk half a foot into his head, and always covered with spectacles: his nose was hooked over his mouth, as his chin turned up as handful to meet that: and the constant toasting over the charcoal, had shriveled up his skin, so that his whole face looked as if it was covered with scorched parchment.—His dress (for I never knew him have but one) was a black coat, with little buttons all over it; which being made for him while he stood upright, now that he stooped so much, hung down to his ancles: a broad leather belt, that kept his coat about him; a cloak, which he hung upon his shoulders, but was so worn, that it showed his skeleton through every part of it; and an old high-crowned hat

In short, he had so little of the appearance of a creature of this world, in his looks or dress, that whenever he went out in the day-time, the mob all gathered about him, and hooted him home, just as the little birds do an owl; and some of our wicked neighbours, when any accident has happened, have often threatened to take him up, and dip him for a witch, though I am persuaded, that was nothing but wickedness and malice, and that he knew no more harm than a baby."

My curiosity being thus satisfied as to the author, there was but one thing more that I desired to know, and that was, how those papers came to have so many blots made in them, which by the difference of the ink, I could see was done long since the first writing? to which she answered, that some time after the old man's death, her mother let his apartment to one that called himself a clergyman, and was a great scholar, and used to make almanacs and other books; that he had looked over those papers, and, she believed, taken out such as he liked, and done what he pleased with the rest; for they set no regard on them; and particularly she remembered to have heard him say, that he would make something of one of them; but she believed he found it would not do, for he soon after left their house, and, joining with those Methodists that were just then come up, went away with them, preaching about the country.

I thought it but reasonable to reward the good woman's expense of breath, with half a crown, and so took my leave, though with a secret resolution to give her half the profit, if there arises any, from the sale of the books; not thinking that such a purchase, as I had made from an ignorant woman, could give me a just title to the whole heirship, as she called it, that had cost her so dear, as the loss of her old sweet-heart Jack Twist.

This good woman's account explained to me, in some measure, the nature of this work from the circumstances of the author, who, I could see, had been a schemer, who had wasted his whole fortune, in the search after the philosopher's stone, and having his eyes at length opened to his folly, though too late to remedy it, yet was able to divert the grief of his disappointment, by writing these papers in ridicule of such notions,

rom the sale of which he might also expect some reli
to his wants.

How just this expectation might have been then, it
now very hard to say, in their present mutilated conditio
or what could have moved any man to make such hav
in them; without it was, that the orthodoxy of the cle
gyman was offended at the author's notions, which h
wanted judgment to see, were only a delicate ridicu
of those wild, idle dreams, which some men, who ca
themselves philosophers, have thought proper gravel
to obtrude upon the world, as learning and knowledg

But whatever the motive was, the loss is now irrep
rable, and has reduced the work to the appearance of
novel or romance, almost the whole philosophical pa
having been erased; for as to the personal application
any thing in it, to the present times, the least attenti
to this account of the author will show the absurdity a
injustice of such an attempt; as it was wrote so lo
ago, and by a person so little acquainted with the wor
that all the stories in it must necessarily be the me
creatures of imagination.

For the manner in which they are published, I sh
only say, that it is strictly agreeable to the faith of
text; not one of the many alterations and interpolat
which were in another hand, being given; but whe
I could not clearly make out the very words of th
thor, I honestly omitted the whole, not thinking it
able, or just, to palm my own words or sentiment
the world, on the credit of another.

How scrupulous I have been, in this point, will
to any one, who shall take the pains of consult
original manuscript, which shall be deposited in
lic library of one of the universities, as soo
work is printed: The only liberty I have take
in a few notes in the margin, and supplying a c
where it was broken by any of the above-men
cidents.

CHRYSAL;

OR, THE

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

The Apparition of CHRYSAL *to an* ADEPT, *in the very moment of projection. His account of himself, and the cause of his appearing to the author.*

ON a day, when long and strict abstinence had purified my body from every terrene encumbrance, and intense contemplation wound up my mind to an enthusiasm fit for empyreal conversation, as I stood with my eyes riveted on the obstetric flame, in strong expectation of the birth of the mystic child, the first-born of the morning, ready to seize the happy moment, when the earth sufficiently impregnated with the water, ascendeth white and splendent, that I might compound the pure elements, before they fly from the fire, and so perfect the great work; my eyes began to dazzle, and the power of imagination overwhelmed my soul.—I saw a blue effulgence break from the liquid gold, and play about the genial vase!—I was astonished! I thought it the substantial form of the son of the sun! I thought the happy moment was come, when the rose of the east should bloom in the desert, and mine the favoured hand to cultivate growth! I indulged the pleasing thought! I melte

the virtuous joy! and in obedience to the divine i
I kneeled to receive the reward of all my labo
radiant crown of wisdom and glory, from the han
ture, with every sense and faculty suspended, fo
interrupting the mysterious process.

As my soul hung in this ecstacy, the flame
wrapped the sacred birth in the bed of purificatio
with a glory too strong for mortal sense, and fi
room. My senses sunk under the pressure, and
dissolved into a trance, when a voice, celestially h
ous, encouraged me to raise my eyes, and I bel
body of the effulgence condense into an incorpor
stance in the form of a spirit, while a placid sha
ened the fierceness of the radiance, and made it
ble to human sense.

An holy horror curdled all my blood; but th
dy of the same voice, which had before
ened me to look up, reassured my fainting hea
these words: "Son of pains and votary of scien
unwearied perseverance has prevailed, and I am
crown thee with the virgin rose! I am *Chrys*
spirit of that incorruptible mass now glowing
vase before thee, who, in reward of thy noble co
in offering this thy last mite, on the shrine of kno
am come to reveal to thee the mysteries of natu
satisfy that raging thirst for wisdom, which has
excruciated thy soul, and thus emaciated thy bod
that thou mayest the better comprehend the gr
of this honour vouchsafed unto thee, I shall t
operations of nature through her most secret r
and illustrate the truth of what I say, by a deta
various incidents of my being, in my present
prepare thee for the reception and proper use
grand secret, which I shall afterwards commun

"I can see your thoughts; and will answe
doubt which may arise in your mind at the wo
my relation, without the interruption of your i
as awful silence is the essence of my converse,
preach of which puts an end to it for ever! I

* *This name* is evidently derived from Χρυσὸς,
probably signify Golden, from her animating a ple
by the universal authority of the occult philosoph

in mute attention, nor let a breath disturb the mystic tale!"—

The works of nature are infinitely various, and her methods of operation inscrutable to the curiosity of that vain intruder Reason, which has of late presumed to pry into her ways, and to doubt, if not deny the reality of all effects, which her short-sighted eye cannot trace to their causes! a presumption that has justly shortened the line of human knowledge, and condensed the mist of ignorance which overspreads the world! some noble efforts though, I see the nature of man preparing to make, to recover that eminence of conjecture and credulity which alone can merit such a communication of extraordinary knowledge as is now indulged to you. Some of the most hidden truths which I shall here unfold, has unassisted genius discovered already; and more shall curious penetration make learned guesses at, even in this sceptic age.*

Know then, that in the economy of nature, to ease the trouble, and keep up the state of its great author,† a subordination of ministerial spirits executes the system of his government in all its degrees; one of whom, for the greater order and expedition, is made to actuate every divided particle of matter in this immense universe. In this distribution, that portion of gold was assigned to my charge, upon its first feeling the influence of the‡ ethereal fire of the sun, the general minister of the divine commands. This happened in Peru, where that body of which I then became the spirit, was torn from its peaceful bed two hundred fathoms deep in the bowels of the earth.

I shall not describe my surprise, at my first plunging into those realms of darkness, nor shall I satisfy the curiosity I see rising in you, whether that period was the beginning of my existence, or whether I was, either as a punishment or reward for a past, or a preparation for a future life, thrown into this. These are mysteries not

* See all the modern hypothetical philosophy.

† Essay on Spirit.

‡ *Siris.*

—*Would not these*, and many other passages of the same na-
ture which support the systems of those celebrated works, almost
induce us to think, that the writers of them must have had a con-
nection with this or some such spirit, to come at knowledge
supernatural?

red, though often most learnedly guessed at. unfold to you are points already known, or ee ready to be found out by human industry, put an end to learning to make a revelation ects of its inquiries! such matters, I say, I you, and farther relate some occurrences, the e of which will be equally useful and entertain- h happened to the several persons with whom d intercourse, in the various stages of my pre- e.

s you may be at a loss to know how I could ar- the knowledge of such facts, many of which hap- ong before my converse with those persons, I shall you, that besides that intuitive knowledge com- to all spirits, we of superior orders, who animate universal monarch *Gold*, have also a power of en- g into the hearts of the immediate possessors of our es, and there reading all the secrets of their lives. this will explain to you the cause of that love of , which is so remarkable in all who possess any tity of that metal.* For the operation of every ma al cause is in proportion to the strength of the spir ating that cause; as the strength of the spirit is r ocally in proportion to the quantity of his mater y: and consequently, when the mighty spirit of a la s of gold takes possession of the human heart, it nces all its actions, and overpowers, or banishes, ker impulse of those immaterial, unessential not ed virtues. And this intuition, and power of tr ration, I have thus explained, to remove every of doubt of what I shall relate.

CHAP. II.

RYSAL *gives an account of the person who du body in the mine. The particular manner of uiring the knowledge of his life, with an expl f the nature of memory* and consciousness.

IE *first* object that struck me, when I ower of a sun-beam, into those infe

where my body was just dug up, was the person in whose hands it was when I took possession of it.

Dark as the gloom of such a place must be, a melancholy, that doubled the horrors of it, sat upon his brow. He gazed a moment on me,* in silent grief, and then groaned out these words with a vehemence that seemed to burst his heart: "Damned, damned, pernicious damning gold! how dearly do I purchase this momentary possession of thee! But let me acknowledge the justice of my fate! I wished only for gold, and now, this equivocal grant of that wish, is the just punishment of the folly, and the wickedness of it."—Grief here choaked his utterance! he could say no more, but sobbed aloud, while all the dreary caverns echoed to his anguish.

Curiosity prompted me to learn the cause of his distress: I therefore immediately entered into his heart, to read the events of his life, which I doubted not but I should find deeply imprinted there: but I was surprised to find that room in it, which, I could plainly see, had been possessed by the love of gold, so filled with sense of pain, with grief, and remorse, that I could scarce gain admission.

Upon this I mounted into the sensorium of his brain, to learn from the spirit of consciousness, which you call *self*, the cause of so uncommon a change, as it is contrary to the fundamental rules of our order, ever to give up an heart of which we once get possession.

I found the spirit very busy, though I thought somewhat oddly employed: she was running over a number of niches, or impressions, on the fibres of the brain, some of which I observed she renewed with such force, that she almost effaced others, which she passed over untouched, though interspersed among them. The sight of me seemed to suspend her works a moment, but as if that pause was only to recover strength, she instantly renewed her labour with greater assiduity.

I *looked* at her my desire to know the meaning of what she was doing, and to signify the cause of my visit, to which she returned me this answer in a glance, that *interrupted* not her work.

* *Chrysal* must here mean the Gold which now became her bo[illegible] *as she does not* say that she appeared in the spirit to any o[illegible] *before the* author.

(I see you wonder, that I speak of this spirit, though the *self* of a man, as if it was a female; but in this there is a mystery; every spirit is of both sexes, but as the female is the worthier with us, we take our denomination from that.)

You are surprised, (looked she) to find me so earnestly engaged in work which you do not understand; but in this work consists my very essence. This place, where we are, is the seat of memory; and these traces, which you see me running over thus, are the impressions made on the brain by a communication of the impressions made on the senses by external objects.—These first impressions are called *ideas*, which are lodged in this repository of the memory, in these marks, by running which over, I can raise the same ideas, when I please, which differ from their first appearance only in this, that, on their return, they come with the familiarity of a former acquaintance.*

How this communication though is made, I cannot so well inform you; whether it is by the oscillation of the nervous fibres, or by the operation of a certain invisible fluid, called animal spirits on the nerves; no more than I can explain to you, how my touching these marks, on this material substance the brain, can raise ideas in the immaterial mind, and with the addition of acquaintance besides; for these are matters not quite fully settled among the learned.

All I know is, that the thing is agreed to be so by some, or other, or all of these means; and that my whole employment, and end of being, is to touch them over, and acknowledge their acquaintance thus; without my doing which a man would no longer continue the same person, for in this acquaintance, which is called consciousness, does all personal identity consist.†

As for the work I am just now particularly engaged in, you must know, that this man whom, as I am *his* self, I shall henceforth, for conciseness and perspicuity, call my self, was once possessed of, or in power of possessing *every real* happiness of life, till an insatiable desire of *riches hurried* him into measures which overturned *that happiness*, and in the end plunged him into the *gulf of misery*.

The traces of that happiness are those which you see me pass over without renewing; by which means he forgets that he was ever happy, except sometimes, when the trace of any particular unhappiness comes so near that of any instance of happiness, as unavoidably to touch it; which touch, by the renewal of the idea of such happiness, only aggravates the sense of the present want of it: And thus I make memory either a blessing or a curse, according to the nature of the trace which I renew.

I see you are astonished, how a person who was ever happy could possibly fall into such misery as I am now in; but I shall remove that astonishment, by the history of my life, in which I shall accommodate my accounts of places and things to the circumstances of my present state, without regard to the universality of our spiritual nature: and call them by their names among men, without the delay or trouble of description.

CHAP. III.

The history of TRAFFIC. *His father's advice to him; containing some general observations on the nature and end of trade; with rules to ensure success in it.*

MY name is Traffic; I was the only son of a wealthy merchant in London, who bred me to his own business. There was nothing remarkable in my youth, except that the characteristic passion of my heart showed itself, in the very dawn of reason, in my eagerness to engross and hoard up the bawbles of my playmates, and the far-fetched schemes I laid to overreach them in all our little bargains.

My father was at first delighted with this cunning, which his fondness took for the first essays of a great genius; but when he saw me persist in it after I grew up, and attempt to practise the same arts in the course of my business, it gave him serious alarms for my future conduct; for he had ever been averse to those artifices which are called the mysteries of commerce, and owe his success solely to close application in the plain w of a fair trader.

But this caution I looked upon with contempt, as
dity and want of genius, and, undiscouraged by his
stant repulses to all my bold strokes and deep sch
which I was continually suggesting to him, I resc
when I should be at liberty, to indulge my own in
tions, to strike out new ways, that should afford m
portunities of exerting my abilities in their full stre
and showing them in their proper lustre.

The vanity which prompted avarice to form thes
signs, would so often break out in boasting, that n
ther was fully acquainted with them; and a ser
decline in his health quickening his apprehensions fo
his tenderness would omit nothing which might sho
my error, in its proper light, and prevent my fi
into so destructive ways.

Calling me therefore into his closet one mornin
addressed me in these words; words which dear ex
ence has now printed deeply on my heart, though
they had no weight with me.

"My son (said he) the day approaches fast, whe
will be in possession of the fruits of my honest indu
I leave you a good fortune; and I have the happin
be able to tell you, in this trying moment, that no
ful private wrong, or public fraud, makes me wi
were by one penny less.—As therefore it was acq
in the fear of God, if not abused, it will wear wit
blessing. Habit had so wedded me to my business
I could not leave it off myself; and I bred you to
indulge, as I thought, the bent of your genius, a
prevent idleness from tempting youth to folly.—But
that dangerous season is past with you; and the la
of my life has taken away all necessity of labour
yours. Be wise then, my son, and enjoy the happ
which Heaven offers you, without tempting a rev
You will have riches, more than enough, for ever
tural want, for every rational wish; and it will sw
your enjoyment of them, and draw down the bles
of Heaven on your head, to employ the super-plus in
of private benevolence, and public spirit; in which b
employments, the abilities, with which you are so lib
ly blessed, will find ample room for their exertion
your pious endeavours be rewarded with a succe
will be an happiness to your life, and an honour
ame.

"As for the profession of a merchant, to which you have been bred, Heaven points it out to the inhabitants of this country, by our situation; nor can any other be more advantageous to it; but still, even that advantage may be pursued too far, and the extreme of industry may sink into avarice, and so disappoint its own end.

"For I must tell you, my son, that though trade adds to the wealth, yet too eager a pursuit of it, even with the greatest success, diminishes the strength of a nation. I am sensible, that this is against received opinion; but truth, when properly displayed, will force conviction.

"The real strength of a nation consists in the prevalence of disinterested spirit, which, regardless of self, throws its weight into the public fund; as may be proved by many examples of small, poor states, conquering large wealthy ones. Whereas the spirit of commerce centers all in self, discouraging and despising, as folly, every thought which does not tend that way; and so breaking that unanimity, which is the very essence of power, and only can give it success.—A reflection this, my son, which observation confirms too strongly at present, and which seems to overcast the prospect of this happy nation.

"My advice therefore to you is, to retire from business, though not to idleness. You will have a fortune that will make you of consequence in the state, and give you sufficient employment in the conduct of it, without embarrassing your mind with anxiety for more. And, to enable you to follow this advice with the greater ease, I have settled all my affairs, and shall leave you free from every entanglement of life. This is the advice, the request of a fond father, who desires compliance from his dear son, and would not force unwilling obedience, by any act of authority or command. But should the love of business have taken such an hold of your heart, as habit gave it of mine, and not permit you to comply with this request, take, my son, the advice of experience, and hold fast the clue it offers to guide you through the labyrinths of trade, in which the vivacity of your genius may otherwise lose its way. Nor are the rules I shall hint to you, many to be remembered, difficult to be observed.

"Be just, my son, in all your dealings; wrong not individuals; nor defraud the public.

"These are all the rules I recommend: but in them is comprized more than, perhaps, appears at first view. Do not, therefore, think them too obvious to have been necessary to be repeated! nor let the mention of them give offence, by any seeming implication of personal doubt.

"In the business of a merchant these rules comprehend a great extent of meaning, though I shall mention but a few instances of it at present.

"As for the first, every misrepresentation to mislead ignorance, or abuse credulity, every taking advantage by superior knowledge, is a wrong to the party so deceived; as every artifice to evade the intention of the legislature is a fraud against the public, nay, against yourself, and every individual who claims the benefits provided by the ordinances, so defeated of their support.

"This indeed is so obvious, that it were an affront to reason to insist on any proof of it. The most eager pursuer of illicit trade will not vindicate a general indulgence of it; and if it is not lawful for all, how can it be for him; or with what colour can he claim a profit which he is conscious arises only from deceit, and from the benefit of those very laws which he thus defeats?

"The temptations to this breach of honesty, I own, are many and great, and some of them perhaps plausible: particularly in those branches of trade, which seem to bear a more than equal share of the weight imposed for general advantage. But, in opposition to this, it must be considered, that it is impossible to provide so exactly for a thing, of so fluctuating a nature as trade, that the balance shall not incline, in some one instance; and that it must, by the same motion which oppresses one, be favourable to some other: and so preserve the equipoise in the whole; and this obviates the only shadow of an argument, that can be brought in defence of this too common practice.

"*As for the* former, of avoiding private wrong, that is *more difficult* and less defensible, if possible, than even *this. For* where all the powers of the mind are turned *to make* advantage, it is very hard to refrain from tu-

king it, where we ought not, and bringing the great business of life into common practice, in its minutest concerns.

"The man whose soul is on the stretch to take advantage, in a bargain for thousands, on the Exchange, will be apt perhaps insensibly to overlook an error that is not to his disadvantage, in a tradesman's bill, or to take no notice of a guinea given instead of a shilling in change at the tavern, though either is as great dishonesty as if he took them in a manner punishable with death by the laws: not to mention the innumerable little instances of temptation to this kind of wrong, which occur in every moment's dealing. That we may avoid temptation, is one of the petitions of the divine prayer, and never more necessary to be offered up than in this profession, whose constant practice opens innumerable instances of it upon us.

"In a word, my son, there are so many and so strong arguments of this nature to be given against all trade, that the general advantage of the commonwealth alone can, in any way, support it against them. This therefore should be written in the deepest characters, on the heart of every merchant, that he should never let private interest tempt him to engage in any trade or scheme that can interfere with the public interest, or is forbidden by the laws of his country.—I shall say no more; nor burthen your mind with farther advice. Observe this, and be happy."

I was obliged to hear him; but his words, at that time, made no more impression on my mind, than the whistling of the winds, nor in the least altered my intentions, though I felt no scruple in promising obedience, the breach of which could never be upbraided to me, as I could not think of practising it, before his death should remove the only person who had such an authority.

CHAP. IV.

The history of TRAFFIC *continued: His father's He continues in trade and turns schemer. rious schemes end in his ruin. The rise and p of his passion for* AMELIA. *The base abuse confidence, by which he cheated her of the great of her fortune, and afterwards formed dishon designs against herself.*

THE opportunities which I had long panted rived too soon; my father dying just after I was and leaving me possessed of wealth sufficient fo exercise my talents on, as I was not blessed wi dence to take his advice, and put it to its proper rational enjoyment.

I was immediately a man of consequence, ar not only in my own eyes. I made a figure upon C I signed among the foremost in the public subscr But all this did not satisfy me. I sickened at the t of having an equal, not only in wealth, the darling of my soul; but also in the reputation of acquirin methods of my own striking out, as I looked up known course of business as too slow for my ad and too limited for my genius.

I therefore immediately became a *Schemer*, a tered into every project which my own brain co vent, or artful imposition suggest to me, blindly, ly giving up the serenity of an open mind, for t appearance of mysterious consequence and desig making my fortune a prey to every sharking pr who flattered my vanity with promises of success, *very attempts* which had been his own ruin.

The perplexity in which this infatuation soon in *my affairs*, far from opening my eyes, only set deeper schemes. *Sporting* upon private advent *king* in unwary confidence, *flinging* the fair *cluding the* restrictions of law, were now

game for me: I was entangled, and must cut the Gordian knot by some bold stroke.

I therefore threw off all restraint, and entered into measures the most injurious to my country, which was then engaged in a just and extensive war. I ensured the effects of its enemies, and of consequence gave them information how to avoid its forces. I carried on their trade with other countries: I supplied them with provisions from ours; and at length went so far, as to lend, and procure them money to support the war against ourselves.

But all my schemes met their just fate. Though I could give their ships information how to avoid our squadrons, yet they fell into the hands of unstationed privateers. My subterfuges for carrying on their trade were seen through, and a stop put to them before I could receive the stipulated profit. The stores I bought for them were intercepted by our fleets, and, to conclude all, the enemy, by one stretch of arbitrary power, refused to pay any debts, and appropriated the funds provided for that purpose to the present support of the war.

This finished my ruin: I had not only lent them all my own fortune, but had also borrowed much more to supply them, on confidence in their promises, than I was now able to pay.

In this situation, the advice of my father returned full upon me, and aggravated my distress. But I had no time for reflection; the horrors of a jail stared me full in the face, which I had no way to avoid but by flight, the equivocalness of my character having made every honest man, who was able to assist me, afraid of being concerned with me. I therefore immediately raised all the money I possibly could, and embarked secretly in a ship of my own for Jamaica; Heaven, to make its justice the more signal, using my blackest guilt as a chain to draw me to the vengeance I deserved.

I must stop here, and look back, to give you an account of an affair, which the precipitancy of my ruin prevented my mentioning in its proper order.

Much as such a complicated scene as I have described must have taken up my time and engrossed my thoughts, I had still found leisure for guilt of anoth

nature, though ultimately springing from the sam
cause.

I have told you, that my father had acquired his ow
fortune by industry; but as the greatest industry r
quires a foundation to work upon, his had been assiste
by the person to whom he served his apprenticeshi
who, knowing his abilities, and confiding in his honest
upon the decline of his own health, established him
partnership with his only son, whom he thought t
young to conduct so extensive a business.

My father faithfully executed this great trust, a
continued the partnership, till his observation of my u
fortunate disposition determined him to make me qu
business; when it was dissolved, without the least brea
in that real friendship which had so long subsisted b
tween them. Though I did not obey my father's desir
and retire from business on his death, yet my vani
would not admit a thought of recommencing the partne
ship, as it would have been but a curb on my favouri
schemes, and have implied a want of assistance, whic
in my own opinion, I was far above. On the contrary,
rather declined too close a connexion with him in bu
ness; as I feared he might have taken upon him to int
pose his advice against any thing, which his nar
fearful temper might disapprove in my great desi
but as I kept up every other appearance of regard,
even respect for him, this shyness was not observed
any coolness occasioned by it, in the intercourse o
timacy between us.

But for this conduct I had another motive, besid
gard from him. He had an only daughter, em
with every beauty and virtue that could mark
vourite work of Heaven: she was about four yea
er than me, which difference of age had giv
opportunity of treating her with such a fondn
her very infancy, as raised a real love in he
heart, as her beauties did the strongest one it
ble of feeling, in mine. Our fathers had seen
ing attachment, with the greatest pleasure,
ginning, and encouraged it between us,
both died in our infancy) joining in the g
that the union which had always been b
ities would be completed by the intern

children: an opinion that was then my pride, and seemed a pleasure to the young Amelia's honest heart, that was above disguise.

But my father's death, before she was of an age to undertake the care of such an awful state, and a long illness of her father's after, during which her filial piety and love would not admit a thought of any thing that should interfere with her tender regard for him, prevented my happiness from being accomplished, while there was any obstacle that could hinder my evil genius from defeating it.

At length, after languishing five years, her father died, without a moment's more immediate warning, having been on the Exchange that day as usual.

In the tumult of this loss, I was sent for; and no will being found, for he unhappily had not imagined his end so near, nor made any settlement of his affairs, in the confidence of our attachment, Amelia gave every thing into my hands, and requested me to make up all her father's accounts, and conclude her dealings with the world.

This happened just as my scheming had begun to embarrass my affairs. My heart therefore, never proof to much temptation, yielded to such an opportunity of recovering the losses of my folly at her expense, by sinking the greatest part of her fortune to my own use; never considering that I might have the whole in a just and honourable way, enhanced with the greater blessing of herself.

To accomplish this design, and prepare her for what was to follow, I pretended to Amelia, that I found many difficulties in her father's affairs; and having secreted as much as I thought proper, and could with safety, and destroyed every memorial that might detect me, for all which her unbounded confidence gave ample opportunity, I at length gave her in an account, with the strongest expressions of concern, "to find that what I had long apprehended was too true, and that her father's affairs were in a very bad situation; that I had, however, with great difficulty, got together something above 10,000*l.* and was convinced, that this perplexity in affairs, was the occasion of his long illness, and had

left him spirit enough to inquire into them, and make
will."

This representation had the effect I designed; Ame
lia's confidence in me would not admit a thought of m
deceiving her; as pride, too powerful in the purest hu
man heart, prevented her revealing her circumstances t
any one else, who might have attempted to disprov
what I said; though indeed it was scarce natural to sus
pect me of a deceit, that, according to the opinion whic
then prevailed concerning Amelia and me, could onl
affect myself.

She, therefore, with an appearance of surprise rathe
than doubt, or even concern, acquiesced, and signed
receipt in full, desiring me to destroy all her father
books and papers, as they could be of no farther use t
her.

This completed my design beyond a possibility of de
tection, and even raised a new one against the poor pi
tance I had left her, though it was not quite a fourth pa
of what was really her right: for I had now thrown o
all thoughts of marriage with one so far beneath me i
fortune, looking upon it as a reproach to my wisdom an
knowledge of the world, to make any bargain in whic
should not have the advantage: for what I had so be
defrauded her of, I considered merely as an acquisi
of my superior skill in business, and absolutely my
without any manner of obligation to the person
whom I had obtained it: not that I had lost my desi
her person, (the only degree of love my heart was
ble of feeling) but the advantage I had it now
hopes to obtain over her, made me look upon
a sure prey to my pleasure.

CHAP. V.

Continued. He cheats AMELIA *of the residue of her fortune, and marries another woman.* AMELIA *sues him at law, is cast, and goes for* JAMAICA. *He is ruined, and follows her.*

THOUGH my whole life was one continued scene of villany, yet in all, there was a gradation, a regular descent from bad to worse; each successful crime opening new opportunities and suggesting schemes which never entered into my thoughts before.

This was exactly my case with regard to Amelia. While she was in possession of her whole fortune, the highest wish of my heart was to marry her; but no sooner had an unhappy accident given me an opportunity of defrauding her of far the greatest part of it, than that respectful love immediately sunk into loose desire, and my success in my former schemes against her, set my thoughts at work to accomplish the gratification of this passion, on my own base terms.

To bring this design to perfection, it was necessary that I should get her fortune entirely into my power; which I accordingly formed schemes to accomplish without delay: for the success of my former attempt, so far from satisfying my avarice, or raising any sense of compassion in my breast, for her wrongs, had made me look upon herself, and all that belonged to her, as my property, which I was as impatient to possess as if it was detained from me by injustice.

I therefore took occasion one day, when we were alone together, to drop some words of concern at my not having immediately by me, a sum of money to lay out on most advantageous terms, which had been that very morning proposed to me.

She directly took the hint, and said, her little fortune was still in her hands, in the same bank notes I had given her; and if the use of it, for any time, could be advantage to me, she should feel a greater pleasur

But this caution I looked upon with contempt, as timidity and want of genius, and, undiscouraged by his constant repulses to all my bold strokes and deep schemes, which I was continually suggesting to him, I resolved, when I should be at liberty, to indulge my own inclinations, to strike out new ways, that should afford me opportunities of exerting my abilities in their full strength, and showing them in their proper lustre.

The vanity which prompted avarice to form these designs, would so often break out in boasting, that my father was fully acquainted with them; and a sensible decline in his health quickening his apprehensions for me, his tenderness would omit nothing which might show me my error, in its proper light, and prevent my falling into so destructive ways.

Calling me therefore into his closet one morning, he addressed me in these words; words which dear experience has now printed deeply on my heart, though then they had no weight with me.

"My son (said he) the day approaches fast, when you will be in possession of the fruits of my honest industry. I leave you a good fortune; and I have the happiness to be able to tell you, in this trying moment, that no wilful private wrong, or public fraud, makes me wish it were by one penny less.—As therefore it was acquired in the fear of God, if not abused, it will wear with his blessing. Habit had so wedded me to my business, that I could not leave it off myself; and I bred you to it, to indulge, as I thought, the bent of your genius, and to prevent idleness from tempting youth to folly.—But now, that dangerous season is past with you; and the labour of my life has taken away all necessity of labour from yours. Be wise then, my son, and enjoy the happiness which Heaven offers you, without tempting a reverse! You will have riches, more than enough, for every natural want, for every rational wish; and it will sweeten your enjoyment of them, and draw down the blessings of Heaven on your head, to employ the super-plus in acts of private benevolence, and public spirit; in which best of employments, the abilities, with which you are so liberally blessed, will find ample room for their exertion; and your pious endeavours be rewarded with a success, that

visible; but I soon recovered presence of mind enough to answer, that "I could not but be surprised at such a demand, as Amelia must be sensible, that I had, paid her all the money of her's that was in my hands, for which I had her discharge in full."

The gentleman replied in astonishment, "Her discharge, Sir? that was when you settled her affairs; but she says, that she, since then, gave her whole fortune into your hands, to lay out for her. And, Sir, my cousin is known to be neither a fool nor a liar; though I fear she has suffered severely for her ill-placed confidence." Perhaps she says so, Sir, (said I) but I know nothing of the matter, and am not accountable forwhat she says oryou think, Sir; and I suppose, if your cousin is not a fool, she has not given her money without something to show for it.—But you must excuse my talking any longer on so idle a subject; and so, Sir, your servant."—The mine was now sprung, and I waited with impatience for the event. As to her demand, I knew she could never support it, as there was no person present when she gave me the notes; and I had negotiated them in a manner, beyond all possibility of their being traced.

While I was hugging myself in this security, the friends of Amelia persuaded her to bring a bill in Chancery against me, in which the whole affair was set forth without any exaggeration. By this I made light of, as I had my lawyer ready, under whose directions I swore such an answer as set her charge entirely aside.—Elate with this success, I thought this the time to pursue my victory, and wrote her a letter, in which I attributed every thing in my conduct of late, that might have surprised her, to love, and despair of obtaining her, by any other method; and offered her a settlement above the demand she had made on me, if she would consent to my desires. This I wrote in such general terms, that my letter could not be brought in evidence against me, and the largeness of the offer was only to decoy her into a treaty, there being nothing farther from my thoughts than ever to make her independent of my pleasure.

This insult only added new fuel to her resentment and all the answer I received, was by another bill this met the same fate, by the same methods, and from

After this I heard no more of Amelia for some time: but what was my astonishment, when I was informed, that she had sold off her jewels, and other little effects, and was gone to a relation of her's who lived in Jamaica! This broke all my designs; and despair of ever obtaining her awoke my love and aggravated my remorse for my ill usage of her, almost to madness.

From this time the hand of Heaven seemed to be upon me; every thing I had any concern in, miscarried; and to hasten on my ruin, my house was a perfect sink of riot and debauchery; my wife, as she had no charms to excite desire, in a manner, publicly purchasing the gratification of her lusts at the most extravagant expense, and living in a profusion that must destroy even a royal fortune.

Mine, great as it had been, sunk under so many dissipations of all kinds; and I had no resource left, as I said before, but in precipitate flight, which Heaven made my passion for Amelia direct to Jamaica, to mark the justice of its vengeance the more plainly.

CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the history of TRAFFIC. *He arrives in* Jamaica, *where he learns that* AMELIA *had been taken by the* Spaniards. *He turns bucanier, and ravages the* Spanish *coasts, where he finds* AMELIA. *Just as he is going to seize her, he is taken prisoner by her husband. He is condemned to die. He sues to* AMELIA *for mercy; she rejects him with abhorrence. His punishment is changed from death to the mines.*

I HAD hitherto varnished over my villanies with hypocrisy, and strove to preserve some appearance, at least of virtue. But this was a restraint no longer possible nor indeed profitable to me now, when my flight took the veil, and alarmed all mankind against me; so mine was really a state of war with all the world.

On my arrival in Jamaica, I had the addition to

grief to find, that Amelia had been taken in her passage thither by a Spanish privateer.

This drove me to despair: I was wearied of life; but resolved not to die unrevenged on those who had thus, as I thought, robbed me of my hopes; never reflecting on the improbability of her hearkening to my suit.

Burning with this project, I fitted out my ship, and manned her with a crew as desperate as myself; resolving, though the war was at an end, to pursue my revenge upon the Spaniards, on the defenceless coasts of their American dominions, in which my other passions were urged to haste, by fear of my creditors, the news of my failing having come to Jamaica almost as soon as myself.

We therefore set out upon our cruise, or rather piracy, without delay, of which I shall not raise your horror with any further particulars, than that we went directly into the Spanish Main, where we not only rifled all the ships we met, but also made descents on the coasts, and ravaged with a barbarity that was a reproach to human nature.

The tumult and hurry of this life kept my spirits in an agitation, that gave a kind of respite to my grief; and the spoil we made in our first enterprises was so great, as to awake hopes of restoring my affairs, so as to enable me to return to England with all the credit wealth could give.—And could I have known when to stop, I was soon rich even beyond my most sanguine hopes: But urged by avarice, and encouraged by success, I still went on headlong to my fate, which I met in an attempt upon a town, some way up in the country, the convenience and pleasantness of whose situation had made it the residence of the richest families in the whole province; as its distance from the coast made them live in a state of perfect security, without any fortification or guard.

To this place we directed our march, one evening, and arrived at it a little after midnight, with an intention to surprise the inhabitants, and return to our ship with the spoil, before the country could rise to intercept us.

The first part of our design succeeded [illegible] we [illegible] possession of the town without any resistance [illegible] we committed all the outrages, and roamed about [illegible]

the licentious carelessness of freebooters under no command.

While every one thus prowled about for prey, fate goaded me to an arbour in a garden, whither I followed the cries of women! I was just rushing in among them, inflamed with brutal desire, when—what was my astonishment to see Amelia, in the most magnificent undress, throwing heaps of gold and jewels into a vault that opened by a trap-door into the arbour! I stood motionless at the sight for some moments, in distrust of my senses, but two such objects as she and her riches, soon awoke me from my trance, and I advanced to take possession of both, resolving not to discover myself till a more proper time; the strangeness of my dress, that was designed to strike horror, and the blood which, from scenes of cruelty and murder just committed, still reeked upon my hands and face, making it impossible that she should know me.

At the sight of me, the women all shrieked, and Amelia, as I advanced to lay hold on her, fell into a swoon. This embarrassed me greatly, as I had no time to lose, for our centinels just then sounded a retreat. However, I thought I would wait a little, to see if she recovered, and stooping to raise her to give her air, I received such a blow from behind, as deprived me of all sense for several hours; when, on my recovering, I found myself chained on the ground in a dungeon.

I was some time before I could believe my senses, or conceive where I was; but I soon found my fate, when the jailer coming to see if I was alive, gave me to understand, that my companions had gone off without me, and left me in the hands of a nobleman, who had himself knocked me down, as I was going to commit a rape upon his lady while she lay in a swoon; and that I had been thrown into this dungeon, that, if I recovered, I might suffer the punishment due to the outrages we had committed both here, and in several other places of their dominions.

I wanted no further information to show me the horrors *of my situation.* I saw them all, and aggravated *an hundred fold,* by the accusations of my own conscience, *that could* now trace the hand of Heaven in the

justice of my punishment, which had thus overtaken me, in the presence, and on the account of Amelia.—I wished for death, as my only relief, and determined to seek it: But, alas! my resolution failed me; and I feared to die. In this misery I was dragged before a magistrate, who, enumerating the crimes we had been guilty of, condemned me to immediate death.—This sentence, so much milder than my fears, awoke an hope of farther mercy, to obtain which, my evil genius suggested it to me, to apply to Amelia, absurdly flattering myself, that some sparks of her love for me might yet remain alive, or, at least, her goodness take delight in showing itself superior to my ill-treatment. Base hope, that met its just reward!

I therefore waived attempting a defence of other crimes, as I was conscious that I could not make any, but asserted my innocence, as to the particular charge of a base design upon Amelia, at the time I was taken, adding, that, "I had the honour of being nearly related to that lady, and that, if I was indulged with a few words with her, in the presence of all there, I hoped I might be found to merit a mitigation of my sentence."

On my mentioning the name of Amelia, I observed one of the principal persons in the court, whom I soon understood to be her husband, kindle into rage. He did not however interrupt me; but as soon as I had concluded, he started up, and exclaimed with the most furious indignation: "Amelia thy relation! No more than angels are related to devils, by springing from the same creator! Her virtues are dishonoured by the claim! But she shall appear and disprove the odious calumny." Saying which words, he instantly went for her, while an hollow murmur of surprise and detestation made the silence of the court the more dreadful, and heightened the horrors of my suspense.

But I waited not long; Amelia soon appeared, led in by her husband, and being seated by the judge, "Where, said she, looking round with the serenity of conscious virtue). Where is the person who says he is related to me?"

The sight of her threw me into such a conflict of passions, that, without reflecting where I was, or how ne[illegible] it might be for me to raise her compassion,

some moving address, that might soften the severity
her resentment for my former treatment of her, as we
as assure her of my innocence of any base design again
her person, in the condition she was in when I w
taken, I could not forbear crying out in English, for
had spoken before in Spanish, in which I expressed m
self but badly, "O Amelia! hast thou then forgot me

At the sound of my voice she started, and loo
ing earnestly at me for a moment, fell upon h
knees, and lifting her hands and eyes to heaven, s
said aloud in Spanish, "O God, how signal is thy justic
Let me, let all the world acknowledge and adore it
And then rising, and turning to her husband, who sto
in amazement: "This, my lord, said she, this is t
man of whom I have informed you: This is that Tr
fic whose base dishonesty obliged me to leave my nati
country; and so, by that providence which is able
turn the greatest misfortune into a blessing, was ma
the cause of my present happiness with you. I abju
all kindred with him; I desire he may be examined
to my story; and if he can vary in the least from wh
I have told you, let me be condemned to the sever
punishment, but that of staying longer in his sight,
ever seeing his face more."

On this she withdrew, without deigning a look at
But her words had a proper effect upon my heart,
I resolved to do her justice. I therefore prevente
husband's command, and, in as few words as po
related the black affair with the strictest truth.
I had concluded, her lord declared, that I had n
confirmed every thing she had told him, but also
many circumstances of my own guilt, which s
omitted, or perhaps not known.

So complicated guilt seemed to require consi
to find out proper punishment, so I was remand
dungeon, but without the least encouragement.
The next day I was again brought into cou
my former sentence was changed into tha
broke alive upon the wheel; and this sever
to be in justice to Amelia.

When I had stood some moments stupi
the judge addressed me again in these w
hast heard, O wretched man, the sen

crimes; but great as they have been, mercy extends her hand to thee. The virtues of the illustrious Donna Amelia over-balance thy guilt, and have prevailed for a mitigation of thy punishment, in gratitude to that Divine Providence which made thee the cause of her coming among us. Thou shalt not die, because we would not kill thy soul, before thou hast had time to repent of thy crimes, nor shalt thou suffer torture, that thy strength may not be impaired for the labour to which thy life is doomed; for this is the last day that thou shalt ever behold the light of Heaven: Thou shalt immediately descend into the mines, there to work out the residue of thy unhappy days, in raising that gold for the use of others, the insatiable desire of which was the cause of all thy guilt."

I would have spoken in the agony of my soul, to desire death; but I was stopped by the judge, who sternly said, that to hear a word from me would be an insult upon justice. On his saying which, I was hurried away to the mountains over us, and precipitated into this gulf, where I have now been near—

Just as he said this, I was obliged to fly away to my body, which the unhappy Traffic had thrown from his hand, into the vessel in which it was to be raised from the mine.

The length of this story will make you wonder, when I tell you, that the spirit of Traffic showed it to me in a moment, for no longer did the gold remain in his possession; and I am always obliged to attend my body whenever it changes its master. But to understand this, you must be informed, that we spirits do not distinguish our existence by time, or a succession of parts, as men do; with us, there is nothing past or to come, but every thing is present in one view, so far as the natural course of causes and effects is preserved free from interruption by superior power.

CHAP. VII.

Chrysal pursues the history of his adventures. He explains some difficulties in his own nature. He is offered at confession to a priest. The confession and creed of a native Peruvian. *The penance enjoined him by a Jesuit.*

THERE is no crime, however black in its own nature, that does not receive an aggravation from hypocrisy; but the highest aggravation of this vice is, when it makes a pretext of the best institutions to promote the practice of the worst actions. Of this I have seen innumerable instances, in the adventures of my present state; though none so flagrant as what I shall now relate.

You may imagine I felt pleasure at emerging from that infernal abyss into light. There was nothing remarkable in the three or four first stages I went through, my temporary owners, being only the refiners and other tradesmen, who purified me from mixtures of mineral dross.

I see you are desirous to known how I could preserve my identity, when melted down with large quantities of the same metal. But you must know, that spirits have a power of expanding or contracting themselves into what dimensions they please; and that their life is not confined to any particular parts, as the heart or head as in man, but is diffused through their whole bodies; that any part being separated from the rest, does not die;* but that portion of spirit which was in it, at the time of such separation, serves as a life for it, and becomes a distinct spirit, to inform that distinct body, so on, ad infinitum:† for as it is agreed upon, bodies can be infinitely divided, upon the same

* Milton.

† Essay on Sp

spirit must also; for it would be most absurd and impious to deny of the superior any perfection which we attribute to the inferior. The enlarging of my body, therefore, by the addition of more matter, or the lessening it by ever so many divisions, makes no alteration in my sameness, so long as my consciousness remains:* The former only increasing my energy, by the accession of so much spirit as informed the additional matter;† for we spirits embody ourselves entirely in commixion, and resolve into one;‡ as the latter separates us again into distinct beings, to animate our separated bodies.

The first absolute owner to whom I belonged, was a native Peruvian, who had found means to purloin a considerable quantity of gold, part of which I was, and presented me, as a peace-offering, to an ecclesiastic at confession.

I see you have a curiosity to know my sentiments on religious matters; but I have told you before, that I am not allowed to make revelations. Sufficient on this head have been already made to man, did not his perverseness distort them from their original perspicuity and perfection.

As there was something in the transactions which passed, when I was offered to this ecclesiastic, that may be new to you, I shall repeat some particulars of them.

You must have heard of the authority of the clergy, in all the countries which profess the religion of the Roman pontiff, and particularly those under the Spanish monarchy. Of all the several orders which compose this political hierarchy, those who call themselves *the companions of their God*,|| have acquired the greatest power.

Though this title may appear profanely great to you, yet they seem to support it by the share which they assume, in some of his most sacred prerogatives.

To a reverend father, of this order, was I presented, on the festival called Easter. He was seated in a retired chamber of his temple, in the exercise of one of the functions of the Deity, bearing and punishing, or forgiving sins, according to his sovereign pleasure. It is not

* Locke. † Essay on Spirit. ‡ Milton.

|| The Jesuits call themselves Socii Jesu, the companions of Jesus.

possible to give you here an idea of the solemnity of this ceremony, in a country where all religion is evaporated into show. Be it sufficient to say, that the pageantry was such a mockery of the Deity, as no other of his creatures, but man, would dare to commit.—The man who brought me into this mysterious fane, advanced with fear and trembling to the apparent Deity of the place, and, kneeling before him, confessed himself guilty of several heinous crimes, in the admission of involuntary thoughts, and indulgence of the appetites of nature, contrary to the rules laid down for him by his spiritual guide.—But this will be best explained by instances. The first crime which the penitent revealed, was having tasted a morsel of flesh on a day, when it was prohibited. The father, with a severe frown, told him, "That was a great sin, which he must atone for, by working two days for the church, without hire, and abstaining from flesh, at the same time, though it was generally allowed."

He next confessed, that he had beaten a dog belonging to a priest, which had broke into his hut, and eaten the pottage prepared for him, by which means he had been obliged to go to sleep without his supper. At this, the priest knitting his brow into tenfold austerity, exclaimed, "This is rebellion! rebellion against your God! Do you not know, that the dog of an ecclesiastic is above the greatest (even white) layman, much more a wicked native! you must make amends!—you must!—or"—The tone and gesture with which he spoke these words, so terrified the trembling wretch, that he instantly put his hand into his bosom, and, pulling me out, presented me, to make his peace. As soon as I appeared, the priest's features softened, the tone of his voice fell, and receiving me, with a gracious smile, "You have not said, (says he) that the master of the dog was a Jesuit! thy crime, therefore, though great, may be forgiven! but beware for the future, and remember, that the world, and all in it, belongs to us; and that to be guilty of *the least disobedience*, even in thought, is treason, and *deserves the* severest punishment. Proceed! unburthen *your conscience*! I know your thoughts, but would have *you speak* them, that I may prove your sincerity

The penitent then went on—"O father, be merciful, and I will confess all! Returning from my labour one evening late, I found my door fastened, and, no one answering when I called, I burst it in, when behold, I saw father Ignatius in the very act of carnality with my beloved wife Mootaw! I was amazed! and though fear prevented my striking him, I could not forbear thinking in my heart, that he who does those things, can be no god, he must be only man; and I curst him in the bitterness of my soul; but he was drunk with wine, and did not hear me."

"Wretch! devil! heretic! (exclaimed the father in a rage) thou intrude upon the privacy of a Jesuit! thou say, he was but a man! thou think, he could not know thy very thoughts, because he had drank wine! audacious slave! Art not thou, and thy wife his? had he not a right to use his own? was it not an honour to thee, ungrateful wretch? and darest thou to think a Jesuit is but a man? But it is enough; the inquisition shall teach thee faith and obedience; the inquisition—"

At that tremendous word, the wretch, half dead with fear, fell at his feet, crying out, "O father, O God, O king, forgive, forgive! (and pulling out of his bosom the rest of his gold) take this, O lord, from your poor slave, and forgive.—Take this, which I got at the peril of my life, and saved to buy the liberty of my dear child, whom my master took from me; take it, and forgive; let her still be a slave; let me never see her more! But O the inquisition? O forgive, forgive!"

The priest, mollified at the sight of the gold, replied, "thou knowest my compassion, but thou abusest it, and thy crimes are almost too great for mercy. In hope thou wilt amend, and transgress so no more, I will forgive thee now: but thou must be punished: Hast thou no more gold?"—"O, father, no more, no more! and this I saved to redeem my dear child: O let me get my child!"—"What! insolent! dost thou presume to capitulate? Thou shalt be punished: Instead of getting back thy daughter, thou shalt bring me thy son, whom I saw yesterday, when I bade thee come to confession. The boy I blessed, and kissed upon my knee."—"O father father, take all the gold, and let my daughter remain But spare my son; he is too young, O father, too you

for thee."—"The inquisition!"—"O
take him, take all, but spare me; I fly
to thee; O spare me from the inquisiti
be comforted; thy sins shall be forg
thou behavest well, thy son may als
fear thou hast forgotten thy Christian
thee repeat thy creed."—The man so
to hear that he should escape the inq
forted with the hope of having his so
thus——"I believe that God made t
things in it, for my lords *the Jesuits*;
worship him, by obeying them, and s
they direct me, to the saints, and the
mother of God, and above all; to the g
Loyola. But if I disobey their comm
or repine at their service, or think, th
viceroy before them, I shall be burne
inquisition here, and the great devil
ever, after I am dead."—"Well, son, re
tise thy creed; and thy sins shall be f
and bring the boy when it is dark."

CHAP. VIII.

*The holy father's tenderness to another
ravished, murdered, and robbed his
He accepts the spoils as a recompe
He hints a method of preventing the
ther's resentment, and dismisses him
vice.*

THE severity with which the Jesuit
tion for the imaginary faults of the po
perhaps lead you to think, that his zeal
ble to real crimes; but the following
you, that it was no such thing, and th
nothing as a crime, which was not detri
er or temporal interest of his society
tent who approached the mercy-seat.
in the army. He advanced with a

long reckoning to make, and some of the articles are ather heavy." "My son" (replied the priest) "you ave had experience of the indulgence of the church, and hat no crimes are too black for her mercy, on proper enitence. Proceed then, and open your wounds to your physician; nor fear the efficacy of his medicines."

"You know then, father" (said the penitent) "that I ave long burned with a passion for the wife of my rother the judge. It was the subject of my last confesion."—"I remember it right well," (replied the father) and you may remember also what ghostly, yet comfortble advice I gave you, to strive against and suppress it, you could."—"True, father; but I told you then, that I new it would be in vain for me to strive, as I was reolved to enjoy her, though at the hazard of my life."—But, son, did I not comfort you, by saying, that if you ound it in vain to strive, and could not live without her, life was the greatest good in this world, it was just at you should preserve yours, by obtaining what you as so violently set upon, but always to be careful that ou conducted matters so, as not to give offence by your uccess."—"Ah! but, father, that was not in my power: he was deaf to all my entreaties: and that threw me nto such despair, that, not able to wait any longer, I ave, this very morning, had recourse to force."—That was really bad, if it could have been avoided; ut, as you would not have forced her, if she would have omplied willingly, that alters the case very much in our favour, and perhaps she put you to that trouble, nly to save the appearance of her own virtue, and if so, ou have both acted right, and there is no harm done, rovided the affair is not disclosed."

"O, father, that is the thing; I was afraid of that; nd as her husband had always been a father to me, nd all my future hopes depended on him, I so greatly readed her telling him, that to prevent it, as soon as I nd enjoyed her, I cut her throat."

"*Murder!* O fie; it is an heinous crime: blood calls *blood*: your case is terrible." I feared so, father: t *I* depended on your tenderness; and as I did n nk it reasonable, that I should have all the pleas he crime, and you only the trouble of forgivin

stripped her of these jewels, which give me leave fer you."

"You are a prudent man, my son; I though would act with discretion. I accept the jewels peace-offering to the holy church, for your sins; the value of them (indeed they are costly gems) the sincerity of your repentance, I shall not hesit pronounce your sins forgiven.

"* For though adultery is a great sin, and, i case, aggravated by rape and incest, yet, as you was not because she was the wife of another man especially your brother, that you desired her, but ly as she was a beautiful woman, therefore the ad and incest come in but by accident; and then, ravished her only because she would not comply, t of the rape is certainly hers, as I said before; fo force a man to commit a crime, I am guilty of that and not he: And again, though murder is a most ous sin, yet as you killed her not merely to ind murderous intent, but to prevent her discovering having forced her, and so ruining you, the int quite alters the nature of the fact, and makes it bu preservation, which is the first law of nature. An ly, as you took the jewels, not with a design to but to offer them to the church, and according brought them, that conclusion sanctifies the w tion, and makes your peace with heaven.

"For know, my son, that crimes which res only, as in your case, rape, adultery, incest and robbery, though bad in themselves, 'tis tr a pleasure to the church to forgive, to a faithfu tent son, who believes all her doctrines, and obedience to her clergy, the vicegerents earth, the receivers of her revenues, and her favours and vengeance; to whom all e is subservient, who are the king of kings, *the world.* This, my son, is the doctrine *church, as* delivered by the most learned *order, in* the belief of which you will *the powers of* hell: do what you will *faith and* obedience to the church, *your sins.*"

* See the casuistical Divinity of the

When he had concluded his instructions, with this pious exhortation, and sealed his absolution with a blessing, the purified saint arose, and said, "Holy father, thou hast set my soul at ease, with regard to hereafter, but still I fear for this world. It unfortunately happened, that I was seen in the fact by a servant who escaped me, or I should have charmed her silence too; and now I apprehend she will inform my brother." "This is unlucky, most unlucky (replied the priest) I know not what to advise; I am utterly at a loss: if you should prevent her malice, and accuse her of the fact." "O, but father, the rape; there may be appearances of that, which would disprove my charge against a woman." Mistake me not, my son, I did not advise any such thing! Heaven forbid that I should advise to bear false witness against an innocent life; I am utterly at a loss." "Suppose, father, I should still strive to prevent my fears, by taking off my brother, as I cannot find her: this is the only way to make me easy; ha, father; is not that an happy thought? I wish it had occurred sooner, and then I should have given you but the one trouble." "Why, truly, son, the dead neither make nor receive discoveries; and self-preservation will certainly justify any thing, as I have said before: but I must not advise you, your own genius is ready, and can improve an hint; I must know nothing, till the affair is done; all I can say is, that work unfinished had better never have been begun.

"Adieu, my son, my blessing waits on all your undertakings. But be sure to hold the indulgent mercy of the church in grateful remembrance."

The officer went away, happy in having lightened the burthen that was upon his conscience, and big with the pious project of making the murder of his brother the first fruits of his regeneration. He was the last penitent of that morning, and, as soon as he was gone, his ghostly director retired to mortify his appetites in the refectory of the convent.

CHAP. IX.

The father's rage on hearing that his penitent had se ed some of the jewels. The officer is pursued b brother to the convent, whither he flies for sanc ry. His reception from the father, and the t of their reconciliation. The father sends away judge in a fright. The officer is received into society.

THE great value of the jewels, which the officer presented to my master, took up so much of his thou that as soon as he had finished his collation he re to his cell, to meditate on the farther advantage might make of this affair.

While he was in this pleasing employment, anc ecclesiastic entered, to acquaint him with the mu and robbery of the judge's wife, and among othe ticulars of the story, said, that her crucifix, thou be the richest in lay possession in all Peru, had b ken from her. "That crucifix?" (exclaimed my starting, for he knew it well, and had long paid votions to it, and now to be cheated thus of it, w thought it so justly his due, provoked him almos ness) "That crucifix taken too! Damned! mu deceitful villain! villain, on all sides! But I w venged!"

The other priest understood not what he m was just going to inquire, when in rushed the aghast. "O father! father! (said he, as could speak) sanctuary! sanctuary! my broth gate, with all the officers of justice!" At th grinned an insulting smile, and beckonin priest to withdraw. "Wretch (said h gious wretch! how couldst thou dare to walls, violated by thy guilt? Didst t fate of Ananias and Sapphira? As th

rith thy feigned penitence, and hast lied to the
in concealing what thou hast most justly devoted to
[revoke the absolution I gave thee, and will deli-
ee to justice, to receive the punishment due to thy
s. These holy walls afford no sanctuary to sacri-

: poor criminal stood confounded at reproaches
he dared not interrupt, though he could not com-
ıd the cause or meaning of them. At length
the priest had exclaimed himself out of breath,
embling wretch replied, "O father! what can
kindled thy wrath against me? I have committed
me, since thy absolution purged my soul! I was
going towards my brother's house, when I met
nd the servant with him, with all the officers of
, in search of me, on which I fled directly to you
ıctuary." "I grant no sanctuary to sacrilege"—
t sacrilege, O father?"—"The crucifix, deceitful
ı! Where is thy sister's crucifix? Hast thou
frauded the church of her due? Didst thou not
at thou tookedst thy sister's jewels, only to make
e-offering for thy sins, and then to secrete thus
st valuable part of them! This is defrauding the
er of his hire? This is defrauding the church of
ghts, without making the proper compensation!
hat can be greater sacrilege?"
at these words, a knocking at the gate awoke the
t from his amaze, and made him apprehend that
not a minute to lose; he therefore, with the
t presence of mind, replied.—"The crucifix, fa-
ou astonish me! did not I give it to you?" And
itting his hand into his bosom, and pulling it out
look of surprise, he reached it to him. "For-
) father, (said he) the crime of inadvertency; I
not to have kept it from you, but only overlook
n my confusion! accept it! accept all I am mas-
nd save my life."
(replied the father, softening his voice, and ta-
crucifix) I am glad thou wast not intentionally
so unpardonable an offence; I believe and a
excuse. Be comforted, therefore, my son, t
orgiven." "O but, father, the officers of
What officers, what justice dares attem

show her face within these walls? Thou art my penitent, I have absolved thee, and I will defend thee. Sit down, and compose thy spirits, while I repel this bold intrusion on the peace and privilege of these holy walls."

Saying thus, the father went to the gate of the convent, where stood the judge, displaying the guilt of the fugitive to the holy fathers, to engage them to refuse him sanctuary, and give him up to justice. But my master soon stopped him. Cease (said he, with a low voice, and downcast, meditative look) disturb not the peace of these holy walls. The man you seek is my penitent. He has made satisfaction to the church, and reconciled himself to Heaven. I come this moment from giving him the seal of absolution. Disturb not the raptures of his soul, that is now joining with the angelic choirs, in the hymns of joy raised in heaven for his repentance. Depart in peace."

"How, father, (exclaimed the judge) can a wretch, guilty of such crimes, so soon have made his peace! he has deceived you, father; he has not told you half his guilt: rape, incest, adultery, and murder! Can they be thus forgiven? So easy pardons but encourage vice."—"And who art thou, presumptuous man! (replied the father, raising his voice, and putting on an air of authority) and who art thou, that darest thus to call the power of God's holy Church in question? What faith, or rath[illegible] what heresy has taught thee this presumption? D[illegible] thou measure the divine authority of our unerring t[illegible] nal by the weak rules of thy blind law? Are n[illegible] keys of heaven ours; and have we not the power [illegible] as well as bind? But I shall not argue more [illegible] here; there is a tribunal proper for such o[illegible] thine; there try if thy knowledge of the laws [illegible] thy heresies; there thou art not judge."

The first mention of heresy had struck [illegible] *into the heart of* the poor judge, that [illegible] *moments unable* to reply. At last, re[illegible] *a little, "I submit,* O father, (said he) *I have no opinions* but what I learn fr[illegible] *whose power* I acknowledge in all it[illegible] —"'Tis well, (replied the priest) "[illegible]

ee, and to-morrow I will visit thee, and examine the
e of thy conscience."
he judge then making a profound reverence, with-
w without a murmur, and the triumphant father re-
ied to his penitent. "My son, (said he) thine ene-
s are defeated. Thy rest is secure here. But such
heir power, and so strong the general abhorrence
: pursues thy late guilt, that it will not be safe
thee ever to leave this sanctuary."—"O father,
t I be confined for ever here?"—"I said not so,
son: there is a way for thee to go in triumph out,
ve the power of thy present persecutors,"—"O
ie it, father."—"Take our vows. Heaven has bless-
thee with a fertile genius, and steeled thy soul
i fortitude. These talents must not be buried, an
ount will be required of them; and where can
r be put to proper use, except in the service of the
or, in his church? there they will raise thee to that
t and power, which thou seest us enjoy. I see thou
dest. Resist not the motions of the Holy Spirit. I re-
e thee into the fold. I salute thee, brother. From
moment of thine election mayest thou date thy en-
ice into the highest honours of this world. The
approaches, when thy military knowledge and va-
may also be called into practice. Great events are
ning in the womb of time!"—"I yield, O father,
lied the penitent) I receive thine offer with due sub-
ion and respect; and from this moment dedicate my
ur, skill, and every power of my soul and body, to
implicit service of thine holy order."—"It is the
l of Heaven that leads thee, no longer son, but bro-
. I will go and acquaint our brethren with thy
culous conversion and election. Thou hast no more
o but to make thy will, and bequeath all thy wealth
ur order."—Bequeath, my father, must I die?"—
st to the world, brother, to live with us."—"But
ve nothing to bequeath."—"Leave that to us. Do
only give all your fortune, in the hands of your
her, to our society, in consequence of your admis-
; and let us find that fortune. I go. The bell rings
espers. I shall send our notary to you; and when
e done, we will restore our exhausted spirits with
ht repast in the refectory, where I will introduc

In a word, all things were executed, and the new brother admitted in proper time into the order of which he has since risen to be one of the brightest ornaments. And the judge, to avoid the imputation of heresy, which his implied doubt of the church's sanctuary had given my master the hint of, was glad to pay half his wealth to the society, as the fortune of his pious brother.

Soon after this affair was thus happily completed, my master, that he might openly show his adoration of me to the world, had me made into a crucifix, in which shape I was fastened to his rosary, and there publicly received that adoration from the knee, which before was paid me only in the heart.—A repetition of all the occurrences I saw in the service of this master would be unnecessary, as the two I have related give a general idea of them.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *changes his service and embarks for* Europe *in an* English *man of war. The cause and manner of his coming that way. The occurrences of his passage. On his arrival in* England *he is sent by his master to settle some mistakes in the voyage.*

I WAS heartily sick of such a scene, when the time came for sending me into these parts of the world, where scarcity enhances my value, and makes my power more extensive. There being a war between Spain and England at that time, about a liberty of cutting sticks upon a desert shore, it was necessary to secure a safe passage for the treasure, by establishing a right understanding with the commander of an English man of war, which was cruizing in those seas. It fell to my lot to go on this errand in the shape of a doubloon, into which I was cast, to save the profanation which a crucifix must suffer in the hands of heretics.

There was some little address requisite to con[illegible] this affair with the captain, in such a manner as to [illegible]

this was readily adjusted. The refinements of modern politeness having softened the natural ferocity of a state of war, and admitting an intercourse of courtesy between parties who profess to seek each other's destruction, the Spanish governor sent out a boat, with his compliments to the English captain, with a large supply of fresh provisions, fruits, wine, &c.

This necessarily produced a return of civility from the well-bred captain; and in this intercourse were the terms of his connivance settled, as the seal of which I was delivered to him, among a very large number of my fellows, who, honourably punctual to his promise, at the appointed time, sailed away from that station, in quest of some ships of the enemy's which he expected to meet elsewhere, and did not return till the Spanish treasure was beyond his reach.

As this was a compliment of great consequence to the Spaniards, the captain had been so handsomely considered for it, that his desires were satisfied, and he only wished to be safe at home, to enjoy this wealth he had so happily acquired. Often would he take me out, (for the beauty of my new impression had struck his eye, and gained me the honour of being kept in his purse) often, I say, would he take me out of his purse, and, gazing on me till his eyes watered, "O thou end of all my toils and dangers! (would he say) thou crown of all my hopes! now I have obtained thee I am content! Let others seek that phantom glory, I have in thee the more solid reward, for which I always fought, nor shall any thing tempt me to hazard being separated from thee." A resolution which he had an opportunity of showing in all its strength a few days after, when a ship appeared, which he thought to be a Spanish man of war.

As ours was a ship of force, and all the officers (except the captain) were very poor: and as the Spanish ships are always richly laden with treasure in those seas, the crew was in the highest spirits at this sight, and made *every thing* ready to attack her, with the most *eager alacrity*. But the case was quite different with *the captain*. He was now as rich as he desired, and *dreaded the* loss of that wealth which he had so long *toured for*. He, therefore, retired into his cabin, w *the lieutenants* were clearing ship, and taking me

his purse, with a look of tenderness that brought the tears into his eyes, "And shall I hazard the loss of thee, (he cried) the object, the reward of a life of toil and danger? Shall I sacrifice the only good of life to that chimera, honour? to that bubble lighter than air, and more variable than the wind, the interest of my country? What is honour without wealth? What is a country to him who has nothing in it? Let the poor fight for money, I have enough! let the ambitious fight for glory, I despise the empty name. Let those who have a property in their country fight for it, I have none, nor can have, nor any of its blessings, without thee; and therefore will not venture thy loss for any such vain considerations."

As soon as he had formed this prudent resolution, he clasped me to his heart, kissed me, and returned me into his purse, just as the lieutenant came in, to tell him, they could now make the ship, which must be vastly rich, she was so deep in the water. My master made no reply, but, taking a telescope in his hand, he went upon the quarter-deck, and viewing her for some time, with great apparent earnestness, "You are all mistaken (said he) in that ship! rich, indeed! and so she may remain for us. That ship is a first-rate man of war by her size: and as for her depth in the water, she is only brought down by her guns, which are fifty-two pounders at least. Put about the ship, and make all sail possible from her. I am answerable for his majesty's ship committed to my care, and will not sacrifice her against such odds. Her weight of metal would blow us out of the water. Besides, I have a packet on board, and must not go out of my way: about ship, and away directly, I say."

The officers stood aghast at this speech, that disappointed all their golden hopes. They urged, they beseeched, they remonstrated, that it was impossible she could be what he said: they insisted that the colour of her sails, and the heaviness of her going, proved her to be a ship of trade that had been long at sea; and as for her bulk, it only encouraged them to hope she would prove the better prize, as all the ships that carry the treasure are very large; that they had observed they wronged her so much, they could go round her if they

pleased; and begged only that they might be perm to take a nearer view of her, which they were com would prove her to be what they said. They al the opportunity of making all their fortunes; th nour, the interest of their country. They be swore, stormed, and wept; but all in vain. Th tain had taken his resolution; and would vouchsa other answer than a repetition of what he had sai fore, "That he was accountable for his majesty's and would not hazard her, to gratify them: beside delay of the packet he had on board, might be of consequence than the taking of such a ship, (shoul even be what they said, though he was certain t contrary,) would make amends for. And that, going nearer to her, the length of her guns woul ble them to drive every shot through and throug ship, at a distance that his could never reach her though, if they should be mad enough to engage his small shot could never pierce such mountains o ber as her sides were barricaded with." And so, power was absolute, they were obliged to submit off he sheered.

It is impossible to describe the distraction whic affair threw our ship into. The officers acted all t consistent outrages of madness. The men chewe quid, damned their eyes and limbs for their bad and went to work as usual; while several poor wretches, whose spirits had been so raised by the of such a prize, that they had forgot their complaint exerted all their strength, to assist in the engage now sunk under the weight of the disappointment crawled back, many of them to die in their hamm

But the captain had carried his point, and reg nothing else: though indeed he was somewhat di certed a few days after, when he learned from an ship, that she really was a register ship of imm value, and so weakened by hard weather and sic that she could not have attempted any resistan had prepared to strike the moment she saw us. formation added such fuel to the rage that in officers before, that all intercourse betwee their captain was entirely broke off, so that sole companion.

This lasted all the while we were at a distance i
England, but, as we drew near home, the captain's
ness began to bend, and he made several advances
reconciliation and general amnesty, as he could not
feel some apprehensions for his conduct from his su
ors. But all was in vain. The thought of returnin
poverty, instead of that wealth which he had disapp
ed them of, kept up their resentments, and they d
mined to complain, if only for the satisfaction o
venge.

This convinced my master, that methods mus
taken to obviate their attempts, or he might run a g
er hazard at home than he had intended to avoid ab
He therefore prudently concluded, that the same a
ment which had been so powerful with himself, w
be the most effectual to vindicate what he had done
others, and that it would be better to share the s
than risk the loss of all.

For this intent, as soon as he arrived in England
took me from his purse once more, and looking earn
at me for some moments, "We must part, (said he,
a sigh) we must part! but I hope to good pur
Thou only wast the cause of that conduct which
gives me fear; exert therefore thy influence equ
where I now send thee, and thou wilt excuse my f
if it is one." Tears, at the thought of losing me,
choaked his utterance. He gave me a last kiss, and
me directly away, in company with a considerable
ber more, to mediate his peace.

CHAP. XI.

The good consequences of a right understanding between certain persons. CHRYSAL'S *reflections on his first seeing the public offices in* London. *His master visits a gentleman, who, in the vehemence of his rage against certain abuses, hits himself a violent slap on the face. The necessity of decency, and the methods of supporting it, instanced in the history of a pretty fellow.*

As the delicate nature of this transaction required some address, he entrusted the management of it to his purser, who had convinced him by many instances, of his sagacity in the methods of obtaining an influence over the great.

As soon as my new master arrived in London, his first care was to execute the commission for which we had been given to him; but the person to whom his application was to be made, happening to be out of town for a few days, that he might not lose any time, he proceeded to settle some affairs of his own; in the course of which, I had an opportunity of seeing into some part of the secrets of his mysterious business.

The professed motive for his coming to town, was to settle his own, and pass his captain's accounts, between which there was a connexion not necessary to be known to any other: for though my late master did not think it consistent with his dignity to be too familiar with his officers, and generally slighted their opinion, if only to show his own superiority, and keep them at a proper distance, with him and his purser the case was quite otherwise, the best understanding always subsisting between them, and every affair being concerted with the greatest harmony, to their mutual advantage: an agreement, which, besides the comfort and convenience of it to themselves, had this happy influence over the rest of the ship's company, that it kept them, if not easy, at least quiet, from all murmurings and complaints of bad provisions, short weights, and such-like imagin

grievances, which the restless temper of se
apt to make the cause of much trouble to
and disturbance to the captain, when these
to agree between themselves. But, as the c
the case here, their common interest animat
duity of my master, and made him go dir
several offices and contractors, with whom
lay, to prepare every thing in proper orde
inspection.

On my first going to these public offices,
gave me pleasure. There was such an ap
regularity in all the proceedings, of ease a
in the officers, that I could not help saying
"Happy state, whose meanest servants are
whose business is reduced to a system, abov
confusion or abuse!" But a nearer view sh
in another light. The first person my mas
was the gentleman who supplied him with th
clothing for the seamen, which are by these
fellows emphatically called slops. As he was
to dinner, my master accepted of his invitati
down with him. A round or two of loyal t
success of the navy, and continuance of the
washed down their fare, and refreshed their s
the fatigue of a full meal, they proceeded t
"I come, Sir, (said my master) to settle the
the last cruize. Here it is: you see most of
have gone off pretty well: but I must tell yo
are more obliged to some of your friends fo
you are aware of perhaps; for if I had not p
the captain, to let the alehouse-keepers and
come on board, and keep the slop-sellers off
men received their pay, on going out, you
had but a blank list of it. But, by this m
the fellows spent all their money in drink, a
cessity drove them to me for clothes."

"Here is to the captain's good health, (ans
other) and that I may soon see him at the h
navy: I am very much obliged to you and
shall consider your friendship properly. B
no way of preventing those pedlars from in
upon us? I am resolved I will try: I b

me an order to exclude them: at least, if I cannot do that, I will insist on raising my terms; for every branch of business is now so loaded with presents and perquisites, that there is scarce any thing to be got. A man who goes to a public office, to receive money, runs the gauntelope through so many of them, that if he does not make up his accounts in a very masterly manner indeed, he will have but little to show, for his pains, in the end."—"Very true, (replied my master) I have had experience of what you say, this very morning. You know it is some years since I have been in town before: I was therefore quite surprised at the gay appearance of every clerk in the offices. Our midshipmen, on the paying off of a ship, are nothing to them: So! thought I to myself: this is very well! Such fine gentlemen as these will never stoop to take the little perquisites which their shabby predecessors were so eager for: They cannot want them. Accordingly, as soon as I had done my business, I was preparing to make a handsome speech, and a leg, and so walk off; but I was soon undeceived; and found, to my no small astonishment, that, if the case was altered, it was no way for the better for me; the present fine gentlemen being to the full as rapacious as the former shabby fellows, and with this addition to the evil, that their expectations were raised, in proportion to their appearance, so that they must have a crown where the others were satisfied with a shilling."

"And how can it be otherwise (returned the other) while the principals set them such an example of extravagance, and enforce obedience to it in the manner they do: for though their own exorbitant salaries enable them to live with the luxury of aldermen at home, and make the appearance of courtiers abroad, how can they think, that their hackney underlings shall be able to change their dress with the court, and appear with all the precise foppery of pretty fellows, if they have not clandestine ways of getting money: and that this is the case, I can give you an instance not to be contradicted.

"Perhaps you may remember a little boy, that ran about the house here, when you were in town last. F[illegible] father was servant to my first wife: you cannot fo[illegible] black-eyed Nan: who was the father is nothing t[illegible] to me, but I took care of the boy. When he gr[illegible]

the best thing I could do for him, was to ge
one of the public offices, for he was too soft-fo
business, and this I imagined would sharpe
d 50*l* a year keep him from being an expense t
ccordingly, I got him admitted as an additiona
in this busy time; and that his appearance shoul
name my recommendation, I added a Londo
suit to his country wardrobe, which I though
enough for him to wear every day.

Well; thus equipped, to the office he went, as goo
ing a lad as ever came from a 12*l*. a year academ
orkshire, which had been the height of his educ
. But I soon found that I had been out in my rec
ing, for going with him to introduce him to the hea
erk, whom I had before spoken properly to, in his b
alf, I found the whole office in deep mourning, whic
s it had been ordered only for the court, and was
old but for a fortnight longer, I had never thought
dressing him in; but I soon found that I had not a pr
er opinion of the consequence of the place.—For
ead clerk gave me a friendly hint, that it was exp
d, that all the clerks in his majesty's offices sh
how the decent respect of conforming to the dre
he court, on these solemn occasions.—I could not
exclaiming, I believe a little too shortly, "What
upon a salary of 50*l*. a year?"—"Sir, (replied he) no
s forced to take that salary; and they who do n
he rules of the office, are at liberty to leave it
then turned off upon his heel.—"I beg your
Sir, (said I, seeing my error) it was an over
mine; but it shall be amended."—"The sooner
ter, Sir, (answered he) for his lordship will b
office to-morrow, aad he must not see any thin
gular; and, pray, Sir, (turning to the lad) get t
on your head shorn a little (his hair flowed
modest ringlets, on his shoulders) and strive
something like a gentleman."

"I saw it was in vain to say any thing, a
he boy away with me; and had him equippe
*all the fashion*able trappings of wo, with
leed, and tied up in a bag, by a Frenc
uld not stand for a trifle when my ha
I *went* with him myself, being dea

would be received in in his new appearance; but
d forgot that indispensable article of a gentle
s, a sword, which I was therefore obliged to
for directly. In a fortnight's time, the order fo
t's going into second mourning put me to the s
ense over again; for the rules of decency were
e dispensed with; and then, in a month after, it w
ecessary to trim his light grey frock with a sil
ing of coxcomb, that he might not appear worse th
ellows; all which, with many other as necessary
era's by the end of the first quarter, consumed hi
r's salary.

This enraged me to that degree, that I was going
ke him away directly; but the boy had by this time
some insight into the ways of the place, and prevent-
e by saying, that if I would try, but for another
ter, he was satisfied that his perquisites would more
defray all such expenses; and so I find they do,
hough he is now as smart well-dressed a young fel-
as any about town, he has never since troubled
or a shilling: nay, more than all this, he assures me,
e are some of his fellow clerks who keep footmen
horses, and have routs and concerts at their houses,
gularly as people of the first rank; and all by the
isites of a place of fifty pounds a year.

w as all those perquisites are drawbacks upon
I said before, we cannot carry on the business on
l terms, if we do not bring up our loss in the qua-
e goods, for it would be absurd to expect, that we
wer our living to let such fellows run away with
of our industry. In short, my wife's chariot
e put down, nor will I deny myself a bottle of
ive you, or any other friend, to save all the
Britain from perishing with cold: Charity be-
me; I will insist upon having those pedlars
rom interloping upon our trade, and so, Sir,
to you."

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL'S *master gives his friend some hints, that him lower his note. An uncommon piece of gen returned more politely than could be expected fr parties. An odd story of an unfashionable st The success of* CHRYSAL'S *mediation in favour late master.*

MY master had heard him out, though not w greatest patience, and now taking the opportunity stopping to drink, "All this may be true, (said h what you proposed might possibly have been do with the effect you desire, some time ago: but are altered a good deal, at present, both among th tlemen of the navy, and here too, as I am told: deed, in respect to this affair, those things are n infamously bad, and rated so high, that nobo speak in the defence of them; nay, it even goes against my own conscience to utter them; for onl with yourself what a barefaced imposition it is, t a poor wretch pay seven shillings for a coarse jacket, when even a Jew shall sell him a sound o of finer stuff, for four and sixpence; and every else at the same rate. In short, this point is s strained, that it will probably overturn the whole in the end; for several of the captains are so pr at it, that they take every method they can, to prev men from taking up any thing from us; particula which I hinted before, of keeping off the aleho *ers, and such* people, and encouraging slop *come on board,* when the men are paying *means they* buy good comfortable clothes, *price of our* rotten trash: Indeed one of them *as to buy in* a parcel of good shoes, at his *and make* a present of a pair a piece to al *when they* were going out on a cruize, as *their*

shoes were so bad, that the first time they went aloft with them, after they were wet, the rattlings tore them all to pieces, so that it was a common thing to see a man come down bare-footed, who had gone up with a new pair of shoes on. Though it is but just to comfort you, with an account of the return which he met for his kindness, which was no less than a round-robin* to the lords of the admiralty, for his refusing to let them go ashore, and spend their money in the same manner, the next time they came in."

"And such a return may their officiousness always meet (replied the other) for meddling with matters which do not concern them: cannot they be content with their own large gains, without interfering to hinder others? But I see how it is: the spirit of patriotism has got into them too, forsooth, and they must be showing their regard to the public! What an evil effect will the bad example of one man have! There was a time, when they would not have dared to do this. To say the truth, my friend, this is not the first alarm we have received on this head; though what to do about it we cannot tell: indeed, I believe we must even mend our hands; which, half a loaf is better than no bread, hard as it is upon us, is preferable to losing the trade quite; in the mean time, I am obliged to you and your captain for your friendship, and hope you will accept of this return."

They then proceeded to settle their accounts, which as soon as finished, my master took his leave, and went on with his business, which was exactly of the same nature, and concluded in the same way, with every person whom he dealt with.

As soon as these transactions were ended, his next task was to pass his captain's accounts, which he also succeeded in, without any difficulty, though for this he was more indebted to the chance of a lucky minute than he had apprehended. For they were no sooner closed, when an affair happened that gave a turn entirely new, to the whole course of business, in that channel.

When the accounts of the next captain came to be ex-

* The name that seamen call their complaints against their captains, is taken from the manner of their signing them, which is in a circle, so that there is no knowing who signs first.

ined, the clerk glancing his eye cursorily over
the usual manner, on looking at the amount, "
ust be some mistake here" (said he)—"How
aid the captain, who was present) let me look
ccount, if you please. No, Sir, there is no mis
elieve.—Pray where do you mean?"—"In the
t up, Sir, (answered the clerk) you see the am
made to be but 800*l.*"—"Nor should it be more (
the captain) I summed up the account myself, an
figures are of my own writing."—"How can that
bly be, Sir, (returned the clerk in a surprise) bu
for all the repairs, wear and tear, of a man of w
such a station, for four years! I suppose, then,
ship had a thorough repair going out, and wants t
now! To be sure, it can be done better, and c
here, than abroad, and therefore you were in th
to bring her home to get it."—"Not at all, Sir,
the captain) that was not the case: she had no th
repair going out, and is come home in better ord
she went, as this return of the officers of the
shows."—"Good God! Sir, how did you mana
"To the best of my judgment, Sir; I laid out
but what I thought necessary, and I charged noth
what I laid out: I mean not to arraign the co
others; I only speak for myself. In these case
upon a man as a steward to the public; and
think it as great dishonesty to betray, or b
trust, as to wrong a private person."

This speech was heard with astonishment, a
ed with a cold compliment, as it came too hom
to meet general approbation; however, the n
arily had an effect not very agreeable to som
for, the next captain's accounts arising to nea
the sum of the last, such an immediate preced
difference so glaring, that it was impossib
putting a stop to them, and so he was mulcte
four years pay; though ours, which had be
er, had gone off smoothly, and without the

My master having concluded this affa
proceeded next on the great cause o
was, in which, with our assistance, he
the captain's mistake

I here came into the possession of a new master, and immediately after changed my Spanish appearance for the fashion of the country, and, in the shape of a guinea, entered into the most extensive state of sublunary influence, becoming the price of every name that is respected under heaven.

CHAP. XIII.

Chrysal explains some farther properties of his nature. He changes his appearance for the mode of the country; and enters into the service of a noble lord. The sagacity of Mr. Poundage, *and his address in business.*

I AM now entering upon a stage, where the scenes are so various, and so quickly changed, that it will require your strictest attention to keep pace with my relation. But to make this the easier to you, and to disencumber your surprise from doubts, at my repeating the past lives of persons, in whose possession I have been but a few moments, I must premise to you that our knowledge is very different from that of men. I have told you, that we know all things intuitively, without the trouble, delay, and errors of discourse or reasoning. I must now farther inform you, that this intuition extends not only to the present face of things, but also has a retrospect to the whole series of their existence, from its first beginning: the concatenation between cause and effect being so plain to our eyes, that let us but see any one event of the life of a man, and we immediately know every particular that preceded it.

As to futurity, indeed, it is not yet determined how far forward we can look into that; some allowing us to have the same power of foresight as we have of retrospect; which was the opinion that supported the credit of oracles in former days. But that notion is now exploded, and men argue, that our foresight extends only to natural causes and effects: but, in the actions of men, free will so often breaks that order, that it is

sible for us to know this moment how he will act next, from any observation of the past; and they th they prove their argument by this, that if spirits co foreknow all a man's actions, it would spare them trouble of tempting him to any particular ones.—But by the bye! for as I shall confine my narrative to m ters already past, without ever foretelling any thing is not necessary for me to determine a question, t opens such a field for the guesses of the learned—Bu return to my story.

From the mint, where I put on the shape of a guin I was sent to the bank, where the pleasure I had fel the beauty and convenience of my new figure was c siderably cooled, at my being thrown into so large heap, as took away all my particular consequence, seemed to threaten a long state of inactivity, befor might come to my turn to be brought into action. I soon found myself agreeably mistaken, and that circulation there was too quick to admit of such del for I was that very day paid out to a noble lord, in pension from the ministry.

It was about two in the afternoon, when I was brou to his lordship's levee, where the grandeur of his lo and the magnificence of every thing about him, made so pleased with my situation, that I thought I could satisfied to fix my abode with him for some time.

He was just arisen, and seated at the fire, leaning a writing table covered with green velvet, on which some books open, and several letters which he had j broke the seals of, and was beginning to read, whil female servant, beautiful as Hebe, poured out his te a side-board, and a page like Ganymede handed i him.

In this easy indifference he sat, casting an eye up book, or reading a paragraph in a letter, between ev sip of his breakfast, when I was laid upon his table his steward, with these words,—"Two hundre lord"—"Two hundred, (replied his lordship) th was for five hundred!"—"But, my lord, th the baker!"—What are these wretches to m whole estate sufficient for them?" "Why l

for this evening; I am e
t be off."——"My lord, yo
me to speak to you; he is to a
missioners to-morrow, and begs"—"
do, I would relieve him if I could, but I have
for myself: I cannot, will not do without fi
more this evening, get it where, or how you wi
lord, I was thinking to apply to Mr. Discount
vener, but he said the last time, that he woul
more on that estate, without the immediate pow
ting the timber."—"Well, damn him, let him
though it will not be fit to cut these ten years;
you hear, get me a thousand to-day."——"A th
my lord! you said five hundred: I am afraid
think a thousand too much!" "Then he shall nev
it; let me do as I will; do not I know, that the
is worth twice as much this moment, if I could
set it to sale? I will not be imposed on by the
I'll go myself to my neighbour Worthland direct
is a man of honour, and will be above taking adv
though I did oppose his election."—"As your l
pleases for that. But then, perhaps, Mr. Discou
call in all his money, if he saw you put yours
other hands; besides, I am not certain that he
fuse, and therefore I should think it
first; you may do this after

so humming a new tune, he went on with his b
without the least concern.

You are so great a stranger to the ways
the world which deals in money-matters,
be surprised when I tell you, that, while this M
dage brought me from the bank, he had called u
Discount, and brought him to his lord's, to do h
ness.

But you must not imagine this was to lend h
ship money. Nothing less. It was only to a
the nominal lender of his lordship's own money,
Poundage had that very morning received from
his tenants in the country, and which, if he co
bring it in better, he meant to replace with part
price of the timber, which he was to buy in Di
name, who was a creature of his own.

So remarkable a transaction gave me a cur
take a view of Poundage's life, the main lines
I will just touch over, while you may think him
the money, and his lordship dressing for his enga

CHAP. XIV.

The history of Mr. Thomas Poundage. *His goes to his appointment. An evening's enter in high life.* CHRYSAL *changes his service: h tions on the ruling passion of the times.*

MR. Thomas Poundage was the offspring of sey, who had left him in the straw he was bor an old barn near his lordship's father's, his weak deformity making her not think him worth the carrying away.

The old lord himself happening to be the heard his cries, as he was riding by, took comp tle helpless wretch, and ordered him to ca at his own expense, and not sent to the an uncommon instance of charity was ributed to a tenderer motive: a susp

[illegible] consec[illegible] his lordship's [illegible]stand god-father for him, a[illegible] [illegible]ing. As Master Tommy grew up, [illegible] and cunning of his race, w[illegible] [illegible]ing to his lord, as a capacit[illegible] [illegible] put to the best schools; and being [illegible] his lordship's eldest son, his pr[illegible] was settled as an humble companion and at[illegible] him; in which station the pliancy of his [illegible] gained him his master's favour, as his secr[illegible] [illegible]retion did his confidence; no service appea[illegible] [illegible]ficult or mean for his undertaking, to please [illegible] especially in the mysteries of intrigue; nor [illegible] betraying his success.

These services naturally produced an intin[illegible] opened to him all his master's secrets, and gav[illegible] consequence with him, that, upon the death [illegible] ther, old Poundage was superannuated upon a [illegible] and the place given to him, in which he had [illegible] himself so judiciously, that in about ten years [illegible] amassed so large a fortune, as to be able to supply [illegible] ter's wants (with the assistance of his own mone[illegible] times) without the scandal of exposing them [illegible] other: a service that amply recompensed [illegible] ship's honour, whatever [illegible] to do his affairs

to spring at that time from resentment. And as could not expect to reap any great advantage from be acknowledged for the spurious son of one who had ny legitimate children to inherit his fortune, he thou it better to confirm the former opinion, by his sligh the claim of *Poundage*, and, since he must be tard of one of them, choose the lord before his ser

But to return to my master. He was dressed by t time *Poundage* came back with the money, when tal the five hundred *for his own use*, he went to his appo ment.

As to the other five hundred, which he had orde to be paid to his tailor, for fear of the wretch's ap ing to the lord himself, in his despair, *Poundage* send for him, and in compassion to his distress, adva ed him 400*l.* of his own money, for he had not a s ling of his lord's in his hands: for which piece of vice he desired no other consideration than a receipt 500*l.* though it might be so long before he could ge back, that he expected to be a loser by his friends which Mr. Buckram need not, as he could bring it in his next bill.—Of this I came to the knowledge sc time after, in the course of my circulation.

It was five o'clock, and dinner just serving up, w my lord joined his company. At dinner, and during reign of the bottle for a couple of hours after, the conv sation turned upon all the polite topics of the tin wherein there could be no long disputes, as every ference in opinion was immediately determined b *bet*, the supreme decision of peace, war, religion, law. But this dissipated *piddling* soon gave way the serious business of the evening, to which they adjourned, with an attention and anxiety worthy of consequence at stake.

It is impossible to give you any idea of this scene which every moment produced such sudden transiti from despair to exultation, from shouts of joy to the m blasphemous execrations of their very being, on vicissitudes in the momentary fortunes of the act *that the very* recollection of it is a pain even to me.

However, it made no such impression upon th *but they continued* at it till about six in the mor *when they* retired for the *night*.

In the course of the *evening*, I often went the circuit of the whole company round, and at length was carried home by a new master. But before I say any thing of him, I must give you a few slight sketches of the characters of some others of the company, and particularly of my late lord, in whose whole appearance and behaviour there was something so extraordinary.

There is scarce a stronger instance of the tyranny of avarice over the heart of man, than the passion for *play*, which now is so general and prevalent, as to seem in a manner to have drowned every other. The tenderest, the strongest connexions of friendship and nature, yield to the force of this resistless infatuation. The persons who esteem each other most in the world this moment, no sooner sitting down to this *decision of fate*, than they labour for each other's ruin, with all the assiduity and eagerness of the most inveterate hatred and revenge.

Nor is this practice confined to those alone whom necessity may seem to stimulate to so desperate an inclination to be the most infatuated with this passion, who possessing already more than they can enjoy, hazard that and give themselves up a prey to anxiety, and often to despair, to indulge a fruitless desire for more.

Of this class were most of the company, among them my *late* lord had spent this evening: some few indeed there were whom this folly had reduced to the former, and necessitated to live by their experience in the art which had been their ruin.

CHAP. XV.

The company represented in perspective. Set a beggar on horse-back, and he'll ride to the devil. A new word of parrying a dun, and paying debts of honour. A commission-broker flung. A connoisseur deceived by his own judgment and eminent taste for VIRTU.

I SEE your curiosity rise at the mention of so strange a scene as this must be. It is natural, and therefore shall be indulged. But, as all description must fall short of it, I shall represent it to you in perspective. Do you therefore resolve sense into imagination, a practice not uncommon with the philosophic mind, and by pure abstracted attention shall my words become things and appear as visible to your eyes, as if they were purged with *euphrasy* and *rue*.

Observe now at the head of the table, that heavy looking figure, whose saturnine complexion gives a solemnity to his appearance, even beyond his declining years. This man wore out the prime of his life in indigence and hardships, till chance, by one successful stroke in his business, gave him such a fortune, as was deemed sufficient merit to deserve nobility, and entitle him to one of the first employments in the state.

Sudden elevation makes a weak head giddy. A plain, good-natured, cheerful man, is lost in the

But this was not the motive of my pointing him to you. It was his infatuation to the love of play, which makes him hazard that wealth which he so long felt the want of, in hopes of acquiring more, though he has already more than he can enjoy.

This has been an unsuccessful night with him. Observe how stupified he looks at his loss! extend the view but a few moments farther, and see how he sits down in the common hall of the tavern, among servants and chairmen, insensible of the impropriety of such a place, and unable to order his servants to carry him home: nor is it improbable that the scene he has just quitted may remain so strongly on his imagination to-morrow, that he may write down the rules of the game he has been playing at, instead of the orders of his office, as he has done once before.

Next to him, you see a short, ruddy, cheerful looking man. That is one of the deplorable instances of the evil of this preposterous passion. With every advantage of rank, abilities, and fortune, did that person set out in life. But alas! soon was the prospect of his future happiness and grandeur overcast! soon did gaming reduce him not only to a necessity of prostituting his abilities to the prejudice of his country, but also of descending to every iniquitous mystery of the art to support his practice of it; for so bewitched is he to it, that he cannot desist, though he now can scarce get any person to play with him, his want of money and his skill in the whole art are so well known.

This has been a successful evening with him, as you may see by his extraordinary flow of spirits: not that his natural vivacity ever fails him in the worst reverse of fortune. He has won a considerable part of the great winings of the person we have just been taking notice of; and though he has many demands upon him for every shilling of it, yet far from thinking of paying one of them, he is this moment planning new scenes of pleasure to consume it all, choosing to let his creditors all be bankrupts, or even to compound with them as a bankrupt himself, rather than deny his appetites their full gratification.

It is impossible to convey a just notion of such a complicated character, by any description; I shall then

fore just mention one or two of his actions, fron you may, in some measure, form a judgment whole.

Having a pressing occasion, some time ago hundred guineas, he applied to one of those n attendants of the *great*, who at the moderate in 500 *per cent.* are always ready to supply th money to discharge their debts of honour. Thi ly gentleman, being well acquainted with the c of the borrower, made many scruples to com his request, till at length he suffered himself t vailed upon conditionally, that, if the principal mium were not paid in a week, he should r guinea as a further gratuity then and every ter, that he should demand his money, till it v

Accordingly, at the end of the week, he mad mand, and, as he expected, received his guin which time, he took care to call upon him ever or third day, till he had received his money m twice told, thus in single guineas, for forbear ways timing his applications, when he saw hi engaged in company with persons, before w would not even enter into an expostulation, fo having the affair known, so that as soon as he approach, without waiting to be asked, he use out his purse, and calling him to him, gave him a to go and buy something for him; an errand t sufficiently understood.

The constant repetition of this could not al cape observation, nor was the cause of it uns by most of his acquaintance; some of whom ha to hint it to him one evening, when wine ha away all reserve, he who was above being as any thing, honestly owned the whole transact joined in the general laugh at his own folly: b as the secret was now out, he resolved to subm imposition no longer; and the next time his frie to wait upon him, instead of hurrying him awa *fore, he publicly* entered into a discussion of *mand, and, as he* could not attempt to deny h *received more* than double what he had lent, *was adjudged* by the company to be suffi *charged, and* he was literally sent off, with *rand.*

This story shows only the levity and inconsiderateness of his temper, and the distresses, in which they entangle him: but the following is of a blacker hue, and will prove, that he is capable of doing any thing to extricate himself from those distresses, and provide for the gratification of his passions.

Not very long ago, a young gentleman, who had a military turn, collected the whole of his small fortune, to purchase himself a commission in the army. Having lodged his money in the hands of his agent, who, for the convenience of making use of it, and to enhance the price of his own trouble, was in no haste to despatch the affair, he made an excursion to the country town, in which this gentleman's seat was, and where he happened to be at that time.

As the hospitality of his temper made his house open to every stranger, who had the appearance of a gentleman, the young soldier soon became acquainted with him, and in return for the friendship for which he mistook the general affability of his conversation, and to display his own importance, told him his present situation, and the method he had taken to procure success to his hopes of a truncheon. His friend expressed the strongest approbation of his spirit, and encouraged his hopes, but told him that he had chosen the worst way of entering into the army, as the sum of money, which he had given the agent, to purchase him only a pair of colours, applied properly to some of the persons in office, and backed by good interest, would not only procure him a cornetcy of horse, at present, which was of three times that value, but would also establish such an interest for him, as should greatly accelerate his rise to still higher promotions. Struck with such a promising prospect as this speech opened to him, the young gentleman answered, that he was sensible of the truth of what the other said, but that it was his unhappiness to have had no friend to direct him how to apply his money properly, much less to back him afterwards. "That's very hard, (replied his friend) I wish I had known you sooner." This hint was enough: the young gentleman, fired with such flattering hopes, flew directly to town, and finding that his agent had not yet concluded the purchase for him, took his money out of

hands, and returning to the country, in the confidence of his heart, went and presented it to his friend, throwing himself entirely upon his patronage and protection.

It is probable, that, when this gentleman began the discourse which gave occasion to this action, he meant no more by it, than to display his own judgment and interest, without any farther design: but the sight of five hundred pounds was a temptation he could not resist. He therefore, with seeming surprise and reluctance, received the money, and took the young gentleman under his care.

For some time he fed him with hopes of immediate success; but, his impatience beginning to grow troublesome, upon his return to town, for the winter, he gave him to understand, "that he was offended at his importunity:—that since he had undertaken to serve him, he would do it as soon as he could;—but that he would not give himself the trouble of calling upon him any more, as he would receive sufficient notice of his success in the public papers."—Saying which words, he withdrew, and, meeting one of his acquaintance in the man withdrew, and, meeting one of his acquaintance, informed him of what had happened. This person was perfectly acquainted with the gentleman's affairs, and immediately into the whole affair, and made him made him [illegible] This made him [illegible] money, but w[illegible]

table reproof and contempt, he ordered the secretary at war to make out a commission for the young gentleman that very day, and from that hour has never held the other in the least degree of esteem, or favour; but he is insensible to such disgrace, and while he can gratify his passions, in the manner you see at present, cares not what the world thinks or says of him.

Opposite to him, at the other side of the table, observe an uncommonly large-boned bulky man; that is one of the instances of the insufficiency and weakness of human laws, which, striving to remedy one evil, often make way for a greater.—That man is now advanced to the foremost rank of the military list, merely by seniority! A grievous abuse of that institution, which to prevent favour from advancing its minions over friendless merit, ordains, that no senior officer shall serve under his junior; but now, by the natural force of human perversion, this well designed regulation is made a pretext for giving command to such as have no other claim to it, than (what should indeed incapacitate them) old age, and so keeping back the advance, and damping the ardour of youth.

As there is no man without some particular ambition, his has taken a turn, which perhaps you may think the most remote from his profession of a soldier: Pictures! Painting is the sole object of his admiration, the only knowledge he values himself upon. Tell him of a siege, or a battle, an attack or a retreat, conducted with the greatest skill, and he hears you unmoved, nor will interrupt your account with a single question: but name Rembrant or Titian, and he immediately gives you a dissertation on their excellencies, and the difference of their schools! Tell him but of a sale of pictures, on the day fixed for a review, and, if he is forced to feign sickness to excuse his attendance in the field, he will be at it.

Such absurd passions are always the objects of artifice and imposition. An ingenious painter of this country, not very long since, whose works would have been a credit to the best of foreign schools, but were despised at home, bethought himself of a way to turn this person's foible to some advantage. He made some designs, landscapes, and other drawings, in the manner of some

the greatest of the ancient Italian masters, whose names he marked upon the backs of them, in the characters of their times, and giving them the cast of age, made them up in an Italian chest, and, by the assistance of a captain of a ship, had them entered at the Custom-house, as directly from Italy, and consigned to a stranger, as from a friend there to be disposed of in London.

The report instantly reached this lover of virtue, who was so ravished with the thought of gaining such a treasure, that he flew to the place, and, being convinced by his judgment of the authenticity of them, bought them all together for a very large sum, but far short of their real value, had they been to be disposed of by a person acquainted with it.

Though this success was very pleasing, and useful to the painter, he did not stop here. This person had some way taken a dislike to him, which he indulged, by running down his work. This therefore was an opportunity for revenge not to be missed. He let him boast of his acquisition in all companies, and display his judgment in proving them to be the genuine productions of those great masters, by criticisms which none but a connoisseur could make: but then, as soon as the whole affair was so public, that there was no denying it, what does the incensed artist but produce the counterparts of them all, which he had kept for the occasion, so like as not possible to be known asunder, and unravelled the whole affair, taking care only to keep himself clear of the law, by saying, that he had sold those things as of no value, at a very small price to a Jew?

This was a severe stroke! It overturned the only reputation which he had even an ambition of, and robbed him of a large sum of money besides, to recover which loss, and divert the chagrin of the whole deceit, he has recourse to play, which he follows with the eagerness you see.

But his is not the only absurd passion that strikes notice of an accurate observer of mankind. The p[illegible] *on his right-hand* was born in the first rank of the [illegible] *but by some* unlucky mistake, the qualifications [illegible] *fell to his share* belonged to one of the lowest [illegible] *mechanics.* While others of his rank are m[illegible] *ies, and* planning conquests, correcting the[illegible]

studying to rise upon the ruins of the state, his utmost ambition is to cut out a buckskin to advantage, and be reckoned the best breeches-maker of his time. Harmless as such an humble turn may seem, it involves the noble artist in many whimsical distresses.

His passion for breeches-making is so strong, that he never sits near any person, but his hand is immediately, and unpremeditately, applied to his thigh, which he has no sooner stroked down two or three times, than he thinks he conceives the size and shape of it so exactly, that he can completely fit it without the trouble of taking any other measure; and accordingly never fails to introduce a dissertation on the art, which he concludes with the demonstrative proof of his skill of offering to make a present of a pair of his own making. The advantage of such an offer, and the pleasure of encouraging so illustrious a mechanic, make his present always accepted, so that he has generally the most business of any one of the trade, though some accidents have happened, that have almost made him afraid to pursue such an indiscriminate method of soliciting custom.

Happening some time ago in a very large company, to sit near a young gentleman, whose delicate complexion had brought him, though most unjustly, under a suspicion of indulging unnatural passions, he applied his hand to the gentleman's thigh, and began to feel it all over, to take measure of it, according to his custom. The gentleman, who was not ignorant of the imputation he lay under, and therefore was more quickly sensible of every thing that might possibly seem to allude to it, thought this application to his thigh was meant either to tempt, or insult him, for he had been informed that those wretches often make their infamous addresses in this manner, and was enraged at it to such a degree, that, forgetting all respect to the company present, and to the rank of his supposed lover, he felled the poor breeches-maker to the ground, and, starting from his chair, drew his sword, and would have run him through the body, had not his arm been happily seized by the gentleman who sat next him.

It is not easy to describe the astonishment of the company at such an outrage, which they could attribute to nothing but phrenzy; but the gentleman soon undeceived them: "Infamous, unnatural wretch!" (exclaim

he, as soon as rage permitted him utterance) "
you know, that I am not an object for your br
sions. I have exposed you here; but your inf
not be confined to this company; I'll publish it
world. Unhand me, gentlemen, and let me
the disgrace of such an attempt with the monste
I'll gladly pay my own life as a forfeit to the
the law, that has provided no punishment for su
crimes."——To the greater part of the comp
speech was quite unintelligible, and only confi
suspicion of his madness; but one of them, wh
served the gentleman change countenance upo
ble mechanic's applying his hand to his thigh, s
ed up the mystery. "I believe, Sir, (said he)
been too hasty, and mistaken an intention,
harmless in itself, but generous also, for one
different nature! Have you any other reason
ing his lordship of unnatural designs upon you
his laying his hand upon your thigh, and feeli
"No, Sir! but that I think enough! too muc
to offer, or for me to bear; nor will I bear it.
not pretend, Sir, to tell you what you must
this I can tell you, that you have entirely, and m
ously, mistaken his lordship, who meant no mo
action which gave you such offence, than jus
your measure for a pair of breeches, which, if y
been so hasty in your resentment, he would h
you a present of."—"Death, Sir, do you mak
me?"—His lordship, who had heard their disco
was by this time so far recovered of his fright
able to speak, interposed here, or the affair m
bably have taken another turn. "No, indeed,
he) he does not jest! I meant nothing more; a
company present knows, that I never had any
my life, but for breeches-making; and, if you a
ed any thing else, you were very much mistak

This speech, and the manner in which it wa
ed, was not to be resisted. They disarmed th
man's rage instantly, and his only concern w
make up the matter, so as to avoid the ridicu
a mistake. He therefore told his lordship,
very sorry for his error, and hoped that he

which every man of honour must have under such an apprehension. This was sufficient: his lordship, instead of harbouring resentment, was glad to get so easily rid of the affair; and to convince the gentleman, both of the sincerity of his reconciliation, and that he had no other design, than what he said, in the action that gave him the offence, he undertook to make him a pair of buckskin-breeches, only from the measure he had taken, that should fit him better than any he had ever worn in his life.

CHAP. XVI.

The character of a VIRTUOSO. *The history of a* HORNED COCK; *with some curious philosophical remarks on cornuted animals.*

OPPOSITE to him sits one of those philosophers who build their pretensions to scientific fame, on making collections of the anomalous frolics of nature, without ever attempting to investigate the wisdom and power displayed in the regular process of her works. In the course of this study, a whimsical adventure lately happened to the noble Virtuoso before us. A man that bought poultry round the country, to supply the markets of this great city, having got intelligence of his lordship's taste, resolved to turn it to his own advantage. He accordingly procured a most beautiful game-cock, and sawing off the spurs of another cock, that had very long ones, contrived to fix them firmly with wax on the head of this bird, on each side of the comb, with the points turned backwards, and inclining from each other, like the horns of a goat, in such a manner, that they appeared to have grown naturally there.

As soon as he found that he could bring his scheme to a probability of success, he waited on the Virtuoso, and giving notice, that he had something curious to communicate, was immediately admitted to an audience, in his museum, where he informed him, that he had received intelligence, from a particular friend of his, a Scotch pedlar, that, in the farthest part of the Hig

lands, there was a most remarkable cock, with two s
prising horns growing out of the back of his head,
the possession of an old woman, who was famous for
second sight; that upon his admiring the creature,
woman had offered to sell it to him, for a pound of
bacco and a bottle of brandy, but he was afraid to m
dle with it, as all the country said it was her famil
though he had seen it himself scrape the dunghill
tread the hens, like any other cock: and that, u
hearing the news, he was come to inform his lordship
it, and to offer his service to go all the way himself
the bird, and bring him up, if he would promise to
imburse him the expenses of his journey, and give
some little consideration for his trouble; and to e
vince his lordship, that he had no design to impose u
him, he would go, at his own hazard, and desire nothi
if he did not succeed.

The first mention of such a curiosity threw the
tuoso into the highest rapture: he embraced the fell
conjured him not to lose a minute, nor drop the le
syllable of the affair to any person living, till
brought him the cock; and, to secure his fidelity, p
ed out his purse, and gave him ten guineas, with a
mise of fifty more, the moment he should receive h
The man promised every thing he required, and w
away, hugging himself in the success of his sche
Accordingly, he left that part of the country direc
and, taking care to keep beyond the reach of his l
ship's inquiry, followed his business, as usual, for
time that he might be thought to have spent in his
pedition. In the meanwhile, the Virtuoso could not c
ceal the pride of his heart, on the prospect of so gr
an acquisition; but in all his letters to his philosoph
correspondents gave mysterious hints of something
mensely fine, rare, and unnatural, and assumed the
portance due to the possession of such a treasure.

At length the moment arrived that was to comp
his happiness. About ten o'clock at night the
alighted at his lordship's gate, and sending in his na
was immediately shown into the museum, where
rdship flew to meet him, in the utmost impati
oon as the man entered, all over spattered
and putting on every appearance of f

"Well, my good friend, (said the greatest eagerness) what success? Wh creature? Shall I be so happy as to see h session?"—"My lord, (answered the man) your pardon for a moment, I am not able to sp quite worn out;"—and then dropping upon a ch he was just ready to faint, his lordship immed rung for some cordial for him, which he took from servant himself at the door, (for he would not admit an one living) and gave him, with his own hand. When he was a little recovered, "I beg your lordship's pardon, (continued he) but I could not hold out a moment longer: what with travelling all day, and watching all night, I am quite worn out."—"But where is the bird!"—"And then such offers as I have refused! Well, to be sure, I trusted to your lordship's generosity, for I shall never have such another opportunity of making my fortune: for behold, the thing had taken wind, and there was my Lord Duke's and Sir Thomas's men, and twenty more riding for life, to try who should get him, but I had got the start of them, and was coming back, with the pretty creature in my bosom; but I let them all go on their fool's errand, and did not say any thing to them; for how did I know but they might kill me to get him away from me?"—Having finished his speech, which the other did not choose to interrupt, though he listened to it with the utmost impatience, the fellow opened his horseman's coat, and with the greatest caution produced the wonderful creature, the head and neck of which had been carefully thrust into a box made on purpose, for fear the coat should rub off the horns.

His lordship's rapture at the sight is not to be described. He instantly pulled out his purse, and, paying down the promised price, took possession of him, and bid the man go and refresh himself for that night, with the best in the house, and in the morning he would consider how he might make him a return more equal to his service, by procuring him some handsome place at court. But the fellow had other designs in his head, than even to see his face more. However, he kept that to himself, and, retiring with many professions of gratitude, left his house directly, and took his leave of that country for ever.

land; the meantime, his lordship had notice, that se
pris[illegible] served up; but, though he had company of the
se[illegible]nk in his house, he was so wrapt up in the contem
[illegible]ion of his new acquisition, that he sent word he was
[illegible]taken suddenly ill, and could not possibly attend them:
he then despatched several servants express, to his
learned friends, to desire their attendance next day, to
see the most astonishing and beautiful composition na-
ture had ever made in the animal world, and devoted
the rest of the night to drawing up a proper description
of this surprising horned cock, with a physical inquiry
into the substance of his horns, and a philosophical at-
tempt, to account for such an extraordinary production.
When this work of uncommon learning was finished, he
indulged himself with taking another view of his darling
bird, and then put him in a beautiful cage, from which
he dislodged two Chinese pheasants, and placed him in
his museum next to his favourite horned owl.

It was six in the morning, before he retired to rest,
when his head was so full of his new acquisition, that
he lay dreaming of cows with wings, and cocks with
horns, and such like wonderful works of nature, till the
arrival of his learned friends at noon. As soon as their
coming was announced, he arose directly, and without
waiting to visit his cock, to whom he had given a suffi-
ciency of provisions before he left him, went to meet
them. After several impatient inquiries into the cause
of so sudden and peremptory a summons, the Virtuoso,
in all the mysterious importance, which so inestimable
an acquisition gave him, produced his own learned la-
bours of that morning, and, when they had sufficiently
studied and examined them, introduced them to a sigh
of the unparalleled subject: "There, gentlemen, (sai
he, in conscious exultation) there, my friends, beho
the most uncommon, unnatural, and inestimable curio
ty, that ever enriched the collection of a philosoph
There behold an indisputable proof of their error, w
assert that nature has placed an immoveable bound
between the quadruped and winged creations. Th
behold a sufficient encouragement, to urge your i
fatigable search for monsters, and to mix the whol
mal creation in coition, for the production of mer
riffins, centaurs, harpies, and horned cocks,

that beautiful confusion which yields such ine-
delight to an inquisitive, philosophic mind."—

While he was making this harangue, the comp-
approached the gilded cage, that contained this inest-
mable prodigy, and, stooping down to contemplate him,
were surprised to find one of his horns fallen off, and
the other moved considerably from the situation, in
which it had been described to them: for, doleful to re-
late! the cock, which was of the right game-breed, had
unfortunately taken offence at the visage of the owl his
neighbour, and in his struggles to come at him, through
the bars of the cage, had rubbed off one, and displaced
the other of his horns. When this deplorable misfor-
tune was mentioned to the owner, it is impossible to de-
scribe his astonishment and confusion. He stooped
hastily to be satisfied of the truth of it, and beholding
the irreparable ruin of his pride, gave one dismal groan,
and fell at his length on the floor, in a swoon.

While his servants, who were summoned upon the
occasion, were fetching him to himself, one of the phi-
losophers opened the cage, and, taking out the bird,
they all entered into a discussion of so strange a phe-
nomenon. After many learned and ingenious solutions,
one of them declared, that it had always been his opi-
nion, in which the present case abundantly confirmed
him, that all cornuted animals cast their horns every
year, like the stag, and that the present case was no
more than that; of which he was perfectly convinced,
as he could plainly feel with his finger, the growing
horn, which had thus thrust off the old one; so that, my
lord, (said he, addressing himself to the owner, who by
this time was recovered, and attending to their remarks)
"Instead of being vexed at such an event, you have
reason to rejoice, as it explains a very difficult point,
and you will now have an opportunity of tracing the
growth of this beautiful prodigy."

This sage solution administered some consolation to
the Virtuoso, who immediately took the bird in his own
hands, and feeling the lump of wax, which had fastened
on the fictitious horn, was convinced of the truth of his
friend's accurate observation, which he himself farther
confirmed, by taking notice, that, as no blood followe
[illegible] it was evident that the horn was of its

ready to fall off, without the assistance of the
struggling (for they had caught him at that work)
dislocation of the other horn showed that that w
in the same state of ripeness, and, therefore, it h
sisted that force. Conscious of the sagacity
remark, in some degree, restored his spirits, and
going to proceed, when one of the company, wl
taken up and examined the fallen horn, and h
given any opinion on the matter, interrupted him
and said, that the hypothesis was certainly ver
nious, but he believed the affair might be so
readier way; for upon examination of the su
horn, he found it was only a cock's spur, which ha
fastened upon the creature's head with wax, as ap
evidently by the remains of the wax upon the
the spur in his hand; and, if they would let him
the other, he would undertake that the imposture
be too plain to admit of any doubt.

The mention of this threw them all into con
as they had all given their opinions positively,
honour of which it deprived them, and cut shor
more, which they were ready to offer: they th
stood looking at each other, till he stretched
hand to pull off the other horn, when they all inte
particularly the owner, and insisted that they m
better satisfied of what he had advanced, befo
could permit so rash an experiment. But the bi
self cut short the dispute; for, some of the co
happening to have snuff in their fingers, it got in
cock's eyes, and made him shake his head wit
violence, that off flew the horn in his owner's face
person, who had made the discovery, immediatel
it up, and showed such plain proof of the trick,
could no longer be denied.

It is impossible to describe the shame and ve
in every philosophic face present, at this lame
event. The abused purchaser, in particular, was
mad: however, after mature deliberation, it was
upon, for the credit of philosophy, to bear the de
silence, rather than expose themselves to the ri
the unlearned, by seeking satisfaction from th
As for the cock, he was immediately sacrifice
culapius, to avert the consequences which suc

pointment might have upon the health and understanding of the company, and to remove such an evidence of their disgrace. But all their caution was in vain: the person who had first detected the deceit, could not deny his vanity the pleasure of making his sagacity known; and the fellow, finding his trick passed over thus with impunity, could not avoid boasting of it; and to this day diverts his customers with the history of the horned cock.

CHAP. XVII.

More mortification to human vanity. A reason for submitting to be pillaged by sharpers. What's got over the devil's back, is spent under his belly. Filial piety remarkably rewarded.

I SEE you are shocked at the inconsistency, vice, and folly of mankind: but this is owing to your recluse life, and want of acquaintance with the world: to an accurate observer, things appear in their proper colours; and, if the picture should be unpleasing, the fault is in the subject, not in the painter, who honestly represents nature as he finds her. As to those, of whom I have given you these short sketches, they are wealthy, and wealth is an excuse for all things; the nobility of their birth not yielding a greater sanction to their persons, than their money does to their vices and follies. And where these tend to the dissipation of that wealth, they only enhance their welcome, in every place of polite resort: indeed, the society, in which you see them at present assembled, subsists entirely by these, as by the institution of it, no person can be admitted, who has not wealth to dissipate; as no person will desire to be admitted, who has not a vicious avarice for the wealth of others, and folly enough to hazard his own for the acquisition of it.

But, though folly is, in the strictness of truth, thus essential to this association, there are many of the members, who, in the general meaning of the word, are entirely above the imputation of it: yet so prevalent is the infatuation of gaming, that they will bear the grossest impertinencies, and mix with the outcasts of humanity, for its gratification, as if the dice, like death, levelled all distinctions.

Observe that person, who seems to be absorbed in thought, in the midst of the hurricane around him. Reason takes the advantage of his being for a moment disengaged, and forces him to behold, in a proper light, a scene so contrary to *the economy of human life*, as that in which he is involved; but wait till the dice-box comes round to him, and you will see all his philosophy vanish, and this passion for gaming hurry him to as destructive lengths as the most thoughtless of them all.

Every ability, every virtue that could adorn and exalt the human mind, conspired to throw the brightest lustre round his youth, and mark him as a blessing to society. Nor did he disappoint the general hope, but, filled with dignity and honour, the high employments to which his merits raised him, till this pernicious passion insensibly unbent his mind, and turned his thoughts from every nobler pursuit. The falling off was most unhappy: his time, every moment of which is precious to the public, is wasted in idle dissipation, or devoted to pleasures, destructive to his fortune, which thus falls a prey to sharpers, while the industrious honest tradesman calls in vain for payment at his door.

Yet, even in this improvidence, the natural virtue of his heart sometimes appears, in a manner that softens the severity of censure. Some years ago, when he filled one of the most important places of the state, in a neighbouring nation, he had notice given him, that a set of sharpers, disguised with the most delicate and specious art, had entered into a combination against him; but instead of profiting by the friendly caution, and avoiding them, he seemed to throw himself, on purpose, into the snares laid for him, till they pillaged him of sums of money, sufficient to distress the greatest fortune.

As it was known, that he had been forewarned of schemes, his conduct was astonishing to all: but h

dicated it, by saying, that the wretches had put themselves to a considerable expense, and travelled a great way to accomplish their design; if he had disappointed which, they must either have starved or robbed, perhaps from those who might not be able to bear the loss, and then have been hanged; so that he looked upon it as charity, in a double sense, to submit to be cheated by them, and in the same manner does he still vindicate his gaming, with persons so notorious for their villanies, that it is almost infamous to speak to them.

At his left hand, you see a person with an heap of gold before him, which he dissipates, with such eagerness, that he seems desirous to be poor. His father heaped up that wealth, with an avidity, that was a disgrace to human nature. The groans of the distressed, the tears of the orphan and the widow, which he hoarded with his riches, now eat them like a canker; and the gold, that he wrung from the hard hands of the poor, melts, in the possession of his spendthrift heir, like snow before the sun. Nor was the sordidness of his heart, in abstaining from the most necessary use of his riches, inferior to his iniquity in acquiring them. He denied himself the very necessaries of life, and literally lived in the most abject poverty, for fear of being poor. To this perverse disposition does the person you see, in a great measure, owe his inheriting his wealth; for he had an elder brother, whom the miser had always designed to be his heir, till an ill-timed act of filial piety lost him his favour.

The old man had an ailment in his leg, which, for want of proper and timely care, had grown to such a degree of malignancy, that it at length became absolutely necessary to cut it off, in order to save his life. Terrible as the apprehension of such an operation must be, the expense of it gave him still greater concern. To have it done therefore, in the cheapest manner, he made his eldest son disguise himself in a mean dress, and take a lodging for him in a garret, in one of the obscurest corners of the town, whither he removed himself by night, and under the character of a poor tradesman, sent for a surgeon who lived in that neighbourhood, and advertised his skill at the lowest price. His son, whose near prospect of such an immense inheritance did not efface

filial duty and affection, was shocked at such an instance of avarice, and though he dared not contradict, was resolved to counteract it. Accordingly, when he was sent for the surgeon, for his father had not revealed his retreat to any of his servants for obvious reasons, instead of going to the quack, as he was directed, he went to one of the most eminent surgeons of the age, and, revealing the whole affair to him, prevailed on him, for a large gratification, to disguise himself, and undertake to perform the operation, for whatever trifle should be offered him, and then told his father, with an appearance of joy, that as he was going for the advertising surgeon, he had luckily met, in an alehouse where he was directed to inquire for him, a person who had been many years a surgeon's mate on board of a man of war, who he was sure would cut off his leg, not only much better, but cheaper also, as his appearance showed that he was starving, and must be glad to take whatever he could get.

Such a lucky hit raised the old man's spirits so that he submitted to the operation without farther concern, which was performed in so masterly a manner, that in a fit of unwonted generosity, he gave the surgeon half a guinea, though he had bargained with him for a crown; but then he comforted himself, when he began afterwards to reflect upon his extravagance, that he could stop it out of the fees for his attendance. In the same manner as he had imposed a good surgeon upon him, did his unfashionable son supply him with all things necessary for his condition, by making a woman, in whom he could confide, bring them every day, as if from a lady of fortune, a patient of the surgeon's to whom he had represented him as an object of charity; for, if he had had no other support but what he allowed himself, he must have perished for want of proper nourishment. When his cure was completed by this management, and he came to discharge the surgeon, after lamenting his inability to make a more suitable return, he offered him a couple of guineas; but the surgeon not thinking it necessary to carry on the deceit any longer, now the end was answered, told him that he need make no apology for his

rage) "Yes, Sir," (replied the surgeon, addressing him by his name, and telling his own) "your son, to whom you are indebted for your life more ways than one; for it was he that supplied you with the things which you imagined to have been sent you out of charity."—

Shocking as this discovery was, the old miser recovered presence of mind to carry it off in an admirable manner. "Sir," (said he) "I have a proper sense of my son's duty, and of your skill in your profession; though you have prevented my making an acknowledgment of them in the manner I intended: For you must not think that I have been deceived; I knew you all along; and I removed to this place, and took this method of concealing myself both to avoid the trouble and impertinence of visitors and complimentary messages, and to make trial of my son's duty; of which I have now had a sufficient proof."—Saying this he took the surgeon by the hand, and accepted his offer of continuing to attend him till his wound should be quite healed, with the greater readiness, as he was paid already; but to his son he behaved in a different manner, for he directly made a new will, by which, he bequeathed his immense fortune to the next brother, the person before us, leaving the other to pine out his days in poverty, on a poor annuity, in reward for his obedience and duty, (in the very words of his will) an injustice that was farther aggravated, by his having made him relinquish the most promising hopes of rising in the army, and resign his commission, some time before, merely to attend upon him. Such a shock was almost too great for human fortitude: The injured gentleman sunk under it; happy in escaping soon from a world, where the highest virtue is despised if destitute of wealth.

As for the heir, it was his good fortune to be bred at such a distance from his father, that he had no opportunity of making any observations on him, and therefore, as the miser could not carry his wealth with him out of the world, he even left it to him; though could he have foreseen the scene before us, he would sooner have bequeathed it to charitable uses, to enrich overseers, and starve the poor, than given it to such a spendthrift.

I see your senses fail under such an extraordinary exertion, I shall therefore close this scene with observing that the whole company may be characterized under

few I have pointed to you. In this view of the [illegible] chose to take the silent moment, when their business [illegible] near over, for, in the height of it, the agitation of [illegible] complicated passions would have been too horrible [illegible] representation.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL gives a farther account of his late lord. The methods by which he had been initiated in the mysteries of polite life. Some sketches of the character of his next master, who gives him to an extraordinary person.

I PROMISED to give you some account of my late lord. He was the son of one of the most distinguished persons of his age, who had acquired a fortune in the service of his country, sufficient to support, with proper dignity, the nobility with which his faithful zeal was rewarded by his grateful sovereign.

The youth of his son opened with such promising hopes, that it was expected he would advance, in the steps of his father to the highest rank of a subject. To facilitate these hopes, at his return from his travels, in which he had not only gone to see, but had also taken time to consider the principal countries of Europe, with those of Africa and Asia, whose interests might any way affect those of his own, or whose history, illustrated thus by observation, might teach him to improve the advantages of his own country, and avoid the evils which had been the ruin of others, he was placed in the lower house of the senate, with every advantage of fortune, interest, and opinion, to support the exertion of his abilities.

He had scarce made himself known here, in his proper light, when the death of his father raised him into the house of peers, where he soon established a weight that made him of real consequence to the nation, and alarmed the fears of the ministry, who, as they could not confute, resolved to corrupt him, if possible; for which the deepest schemes were put in practice to relax

his morals, and embarrass his fortune, as the present situation of both raised him above their attempts.

It would require uncommon virtue to resist the temptations to vice, in an age whose refinements have taken off every grossness, and almost every horror of its appearance. His regard was won, by a most delicate application to that vanity, which is too often the shadow of merit, especially in youth; the very persons who designed to change his principles, seeming to give up theirs to the superior force of his reason.

Such artifice soon won the confidence of his unguarded heart, and inclined it to receive their opinions and advice, without farther examination; as the heat of youth and a vivid imagination assisted their designs against his fortune, the success of which was in itself a sufficient reward.

He had always expressed a dislike to play, nor ever gave into it but in complaisance to company. To conquer this aversion was therefore their last labour, in which they found easier success than they could even have hoped for. The affluence of his fortune made him above apprehension of loss, and a disdain to be excelled, even in an art he disapproved, engaged him with a keenness, that soon made his advances in the art a pleasure to him.

The work was now done; and a few years of his own industry, with the assistance of his friends, and the management of his faithful steward, made him willing to enter into the pay of a ministry, which he might in less time have overturned.

This was his situation at that time; but some secret struggles which I saw reason and virtue making in his heart, make me think he meditates a revolt from his infatuation, which the least liberty to his natural good sense could not fail to accomplish: an event which the rapacity of Poundage must hasten, to his own ruin.

The person, in whose possession I left the scene you have just beheld, was one of those who had been so successful in initiating my late master into all the mysteries of pleasure. Indeed, he seemed designed by nature to extend its empire over all mankind, making it the sole object of abilities equal to the most exalted par-

suits, to invent new, to improve the old methods o
tifying sense, and enforcing his precepts, by an ex
so keen, and a conversation so captivating, as not
resisted.

Appetites so extensive required a large suppo
provide which, for fortune had so far frowned up
birth, that he was but a younger brother, he was
pelled to steal some moments from his darling plea
and sacrifice them to business.—The interest of
mily and his own abilities had raised him to the
employments in the state; but as the sole motive
submitting to the restraint of any application, was
quire a fund for the gratification of his pleasure
haste to arrive at that end precipitated him into the
destructive measures, and made him ready and ea
embrace every opportunity of sacrificing, or rathe
ing the interest of his country for present p
gain.

The proper application of the gifts of Heaven
them a blessing. This cast of his disposition
those abilities, which under a right direction,
have been of the highest service to himself and his
try, a real prejudice to both, making him the read
dangerous instrument of the most enormous crime
could promise present gratification to his passions.

In such a life, there must necessarily be many
greeable occurrences, but they make no impressi
him, for his whole soul is so devoted to pleasure,
upon the least miscarriage in business, he finds im
ate relief in the return to that, which he can fly to,
out any difficulty, the natural vivacity of his te
that makes his conversation so bewitching to other
ver yielding to a second moment's vexation at an
event.

As the viper bears in herself the antidote of her p
this dissipation of temper prevents his abilities
ing all the mischief he otherwise might, by p
the mask, and showing his designs too soon for
complishment. The very persons, who woul
avail themselves of the venality, not daring t
the inconstancy of his disposition; so that he
his greatest power of doing evil, otherwise th

posing, and impeding the measures of those whose successful honesty disappointed his designs, and showed the danger of them in its proper light.

You will not imagine, that my stay could be long in his possession. He that very day gave me to an author, for throwing dirt on the characters of those who had detected and defeated his schemes of leading his country into ruin.

CHAP. XIX.

The history and character of CHRYSAL'S *new master. His adventures at a coffee-house. The fun of a modern* GENIUS *retorted upon himself, by the grave rebuke of a testy veteran.*

MY new master was a votary of Apollo, in the double capacity of physic and letters: for, the former not affording scope enough for his genius, he usually dedicated his leisure hours to the gentler entertainment of the latter, through the extensive circle of which he had occasionally ran; there not being a branch in the wide wood of science which had not felt his pruning: the lowest rudiments of the most vulgar arts being, in his opinion, no more beneath the philosophic pen, than the most abstruse heights of speculation.

It must be owned, that, in such a latitude of study, he often was obliged to prostitute his labours; but for this he had the solid consolation, that his gain generally rose, in proportion as his subject sunk, the caprice of the world paying best, that is, buying most eagerly, what it affected to decry most. Nor is this to be wondered at, a loose tale, or a receipt for cooking a new dish, being better adapted to general taste, than a moral essay, or metaphysical speculation.

From his patron's levee, my master went directly home, and, undressing into his cap and slippers, ascended to his study, and took a meditative turn or two, revolving in his mind the many grievances that called upon him for redress, from the success of that morning.

At length, bursting into a rapture, he cri
think no more! Be the wants of yesterday forg
of to-morrow will come too soon, without the an
of thought! I cannot pay all I owe! I cannot p
I want! Hence then, vain care! I'll depend o
and myself, for a greater supply another day.
dulge my genius with the present."—Big with
roic resolution, he gave orders for dinner, a
sending for his best suit home, he dressed hims
pride, and went to a coffee-house to look at the

The pleasure of *my* company had given such
his spirits, naturally high, that he soon drew
tion of the coffee-room, the greater part of the
gathering in a circle round him, to hear his re
the publications of the day, which he threw ou
confidence of one, who thought his opinion the
ed standard of all writing; and, at the same ti
a sprightliness that made his very impudence a
dity entertaining.

While he was thus running on, in the torre
rangue, a veteran, whose only employment
years, was talking over the actions of his yo
comparing them to the mistakes and losses of
sent times, no longer able to contain his rage,
his audience drawn from him, in the midst of
tale, rose up with an execration that shook
and calling for his cloak and cane, "This is
borne (exclaimed he.) Here, waiter, take for n
I shall stay in such a place no longer: is this t
freedom, forsooth! that a man must be disturb
discourse, and not have liberty to speak where
his money? Had I but the command here, I'd se
orders; every prating puppy should not presu
terrupt his betters: things are like to go well
when matters of the highest consequence can
is upon by noise and nonsense. This is freed
vengeance!

The look and accent with which these words
nounced, were too terrible for my master to e
both nature and experience having given hi
an apprehension of danger, that his readiest
mind was not always able to conceal it. H

fore, cut short at once, and could scarce muster spir to throw a wink at some of those about him, as the *m of war* looked another way.

But the triumph was not so absolute over all the com pany, one of whom, resolving to have some *fun*, crie out, "Pray, doctor, proceed; you are just in the mos interesting part of your story: the colonel could not mean to interrupt you; he is too fond of telling his own story to give another such pain; go on, you should not be frighted at a flash in the pan."

"Frighted indeed" (replied the doctor, gathering courage when he saw himself supported) at what I wonder! at the sight of what old age can sink to! no, no! I am not so easily frighted! I leave that to your antiquated heroes, the exploits of whose youth have exhausted their courage: I mean no offence;—but to go on, as I was saying, the discovery of the sleep of plants accounts in the clearest manner"—"Hold, doctor (cries the other) that was not as you were saying, you were telling us of the nobleman, who caught his coachman in bed with his lady, one morning, when he came home, sooner than usual from the tavern, pray how did she bring herself off?"

"Oh, was that it (replied the doctor) faith I had forgot; the fury of *Mars* had like to have made a gap in annals of *Venus:* ha! ha! ha! why she made no ng of it, but laughing in his face, most heroically, *tit tat*, my dear, is but fair play, (said she) while I say hing at your staying out night after night with *Kitty*, cannot in conscience blame my comforting myself tle with *John*."

he colonel stood all this while convulsed with rage, big for utterance, but the universal laugh, that fol d the doctor's last words, rousing him, he advanced m, "whom do you dare to laugh at, *poltron?* (says king him by the nose) whose courage is exhausted? you are beneath my notice or resentment, farther this," (then spitting full in his face, he turn he gentleman who had set the doctor on, and who gan not to like the joke any farther) "But fo ! you perhaps may be a gentleman, and wo a further account! will you please to

up stairs with me, and let me know what you mean by a flash in the pan?"

The ceremonies of attending him, on such an expedition, would not have been much more agreeable to the gentleman than to my master, but he had more command of his fear, and was well-used to bring himself off with a joke. "Sir, (says he) you need not give yourself the trouble of going up stairs, for what I can as well do here. By bidding the doctor not be frighted, I meant at the circumstances of his own story, for, just as you interrupted him, he had said that the lord snapped a pistol at his lady, which had flashed in the pan! That was all, sir! I could never mean it to offend you, or show a doubt of your courage, which I have heard you relate so many surprising instances of, so often, and always so invariably alike, that they must be true."

"Sir! sir! have a care, (replied the colonel) I do not desire to be troubled with such a gentleman as I perceive you are! But let me tell you, sir, that I have seen a man's face broke, before now, for wearing such a sneer? As to the stories I tell, I am satisfied they will be of no service to you, nor raise the least emulation in a man who can stay lounging about town, when his country has occasion for him. I was younger than you when I went a volunteer with lord Cutts, under the duke of Marlborough, nor was I urged by want. I had a good estate, sir, sufficient to supply me with what you call the pleasures of life, if I could have thought any thing a pleasure that was not attended with honour. Sir, I lost this hand at Blenheim, and this leg at Malplaquet! But why do I tell you so! you will preserve your hands to take snuff; and your legs to walk the park, the proper scene of your campaigns." With which words the doughty hero marched away to his chariot.

Though this lecture was rather too grave for the taste of the person to whom it was addressed, it gave great pleasure to the unconcerned part of the company, and to none more than my master, who had wiped his face, and began to come to himself, as soon as he saw the danger directed another way.

Before the gentleman could speak, the doctor came up to him, and said, "I am sorry, sir, that you shoul

ave drawn this storm upon yourself, upon my account! t I bore the worst of it! You heard but the whistling, he winds, and the shower fell on me! 'tis well though what such dotards do is not esteemed an af- t!" "An affront, sir, (replied the other) I do not erstand you! I hope you do not insinuate, that re was any affront offered to me, or that I was in east concerned in what was said, only to you!" "Not all, sir, (returned doctor) not at all, sir! the colonel's ourse was all directed to me, to be sure! and I hope o profit by it, thus far, that I will never interrupt him gain!" And with these words he left his former friend he field, not caring to enter into any farther altercation ith him, for fear he might take it into his head to vindi- ate his character on *him*, as *he knew his man*. Such slight ebuffs made not a moment's impression on the temper y master; he was used to, and made nothing of them! good dinner, and a bottle of wine, sent him in the ening, in a critical enthusiasm, to the theatre, where ll action fell short of the sublimity of his conception, all xpression of the warmth of his feeling, as he fully ex- ibited to every company in the coffee-house, while he at public supper after the play was done.

CHAP. XX.

ome further account of CHRYSAL'S *master. His con- versation and engagements with two booksellers. Some of the secrets of the trade.* CHRYSAL *changes his ser- vice.*

EXTENSIVE as these scenes were, they showed not master in his proper light. His peculiar sphere was study, where the inconsistency of his works showed chaos in the brain, from whence they sprung. Chaos I say! Chaos is order to the confusion there. For ly the discordant seeds of such ill-matched things e never jumbled together before. An auctioneer's ry is a regular system, in comparison to his head h an heap has neither beginning nor end. No fix

point to commence a description from. I shall there
waive such an attempt, and only strive to convey so
idea of it, from its effects.—At five the next morning
arose to his labours, the first of which was to consid
what he should begin the day with, such was the mu
tude he had in hand. But what reason could not de
mine, chance must, and he took them as they happe
to lie, panegyric, libel, physic, divinity, cookery, cr
cism, politics, ballads, botany, &c. &c. &c. In al
which he indefatigably worked the task of the day, cha
ing his subject with as little concern as he did his pap
and though such rambling prevented his ever getti
deeper than the surface of any subject, yet it showed
extent and volubility of his capacity, and that it wan
only regular application, to any science, to be eminent i

As soon as he had finished, and the devils had
ried away his labours, he was just descending to go
when a bookseller came to pay him a visit. After m
ceremony on one side, and little civility on the oth
Mr. Vellum thus accosted my master: "Well, Sir, I
there is no dependence on the word of an autho
thought I was to have the answer to yesterday's p
phlet last night! somebody else will do it, and the
shall be finely off."

"Upon my honour, Sir, (replied my master) I ass
you I should have done it, but some business"—"W
business can you have, that should interfere a mom
with your engagements with me?"—"Dear Mr. Vell
do but hear me! There is a noble lord going to be
vorced for impotence; I just got an hint of the mat
the night before last, and so waited upon his lordsh
gentleman yesterday morning, with whom I have a p
ticular intimacy, having served him in my profess
more than once: and from him I have learned the wh
story, and now leave me to set it out! I'll engage
make a noble eighteen-pennyworth of it, at least, by
morrow morning." "Why, there may be something
that; but in the mean time you should not let other m
ters cool!"—"Never fear, pray how did yesterda
pamphlet do?"—"Why, tolerably well; but the
was so gross, that I was almost afraid."—"A
never fear me for an home cut! never fear me!"
hear nothing of the exercitations!"—"No; I sen

sheet above an hour ago!"—"Then there's that book you promised to re-write; some one else will do it, and prevent you."—"Never fear, I have just laid down a scale for the style; besides, I have altered the title already, and that you know is the principal thing."—"That is right! Now you speak of titles, I want half a dozen directly! this very day if possible!"—"'Tis rather too late now; but where are the books?"—"In the lumber-garret, where they have lain these seven years."—"That is well; they are forgot by this."—"Forgot! why they were never known! the author was a man of fortune, who printed them at his own expense, but I prevented the sale, and so had them for the publishing! Ha! ha! ha! besides a good consideration for buying up at a double price, what I had (*not*) sold of them; so that it was not a bad job; and, now he is dead, they may safely come out under new titles!—It will be too great a delay to wait to see them, but here are the old titles, which I suppose may do."—"Why, aye; they may do! but I cannot possibly write them this evening; you know I must answer that pamphlet I wrote last week, before it is forgot; I have an answer ready, that will make a noise; I expect it will raise a curiosity, that will sell another edition of the pamphlet. I left opens for such retorts upon the characters I praised in that, and have such pieces of secret history to hit them off with, that I'll engage for the success."

"Aye, secret history, and stories of family misfortunes, and such like, may do something! But I had like to have forgot the main business of my coming. There is an account of the death of an eminent divine, this morning: could we not vamp up a volume or two of sermons for him, think you? He was suspected of heresy and atheism, and you know that would make any thing in his name go off." "Egad, a good thought! and particularly lucky at this time: for as I have been engaged in divinity lately, I know the weak sides of the question, and a little infidelity will be a refreshment to me. It shall be done! the sermons shall be ready without delay. *Have not* you got some by you that did not go off: let me have one of each, and I'll interline them to save time; but will you publish them yourself?—I thought you had given up sermons!" "[illegible]

nem in to Mr. Vampe: I'll reserve the confutation
m to myself!—Egad, another good thought; the
tation will do better! and I'll take care to make it a
t one, and play the devil with the author; ha, ha,
—But, Mr. Vellum, your coming here this morning
vented my waiting on you: it is a great while since
a promised to settle with me. You should consider,
;"—"What pray, good Sir, should I consider? that
have supported you?"—"Supported me, Mr. Doc-
ir, I have a profession."—"I know you have, Mr. Doc-
or; a profession indeed, in which his majesty's subjects
may bless God that nine in ten of you would starve, if
they had no other way of getting their bread besides
that."—"Mr. Vellum, you know this way of talking sig-
nifies nothing. It is a long time since we have settled
any account, and there are a great many articles! Le
me see: aye, here they are! and a long list it is! Nin
teen pamphlets, with answers to fourteen of them; ni
rapes, six murders, five fast, and four funeral s
mons, thirty-six essays, twenty-two wills, twenty-four"—
volumes re-writ, seventeen wills, twenty-four"—
on, Sir, go on! but when you have done look at this
then talk to me of an account; here is your bo
15*l.* which is due these two years; and it is very
to be sure, that you should leave it out-standing s
if you had any account to set off against it! bu
glad I know you; and, since you talk of accou
serve that I demand my money, due on this bon
I will have, and when you have paid that, it wil
enough for me to settle accounts with you, so,
servant."

"Mr. Vellum, good Mr. Vellum, do not be
I did not mean to give you offence."—"Accou
have I not supplied you with paper above th
we agreed for, and yet you
lum, but you hav
of th

out to two shillings: and to encourage you, and show you that I mean generously by you, when you have finished *that*, and the *Answer*, and the *Sermons*, and the *Confutations* and the *Titles*, and the *Exercitations*, I will give you up your bond, and then we will begin an account on fair even terms. But I am in haste, I have three or four other gentlemen to call upon; I shall depend upon your promise, and so good morning."—"Good morning to you, good Mr. Vellum—Damned, imposing, grinding scoundrel; but I'll be quit with you, for all your tricks (said the doctor, as soon as Mr. Vellum was out of the room) and teach such stupid rascals to attempt outwitting men of genius."

When I considered the nature and importance of my master's demand, I could not but wonder at the ease with which he took a denial, and the joy he expressed at Mr. Vellum's departure; but the mystery was soon cleared up, by the arrival of Mr. Pamphlet, another of the trade, almost the very moment Vellum went down stairs, and whom, I saw by his reception, my master expected.

If I was before shocked at the cruelty with which I thought Vellum treated my master, I was now no less so, at the part *he* acted with Pamphlet, with whom he bargained over again for the very same *ware* which he before promised to Vellum, and flattered him with an assurance of having his business done, that is, the answers and re-writing, before Vellum possibly could, for they were mortal enemies.

The discourse between these was much the same as the former, only that it was concluded in a different manner; Pamphlet giving my master a couple of pieces to keep him in mind of his engagement.

I was utterly at a loss to think how he meant to act between these two; when he put an end to my doubts by this soliloquy. "So, now, I have despatched you two, the day is my own; keep my engagements! *I* will, with both alike. Let me see, there is nothing in it but a little trouble of writing: I can divide the hits between both answers, according to the opens I have left on purpose, and so send them to both at the same time; only to divide the alterations in my scale of style, and make a second title, and so 'tis done. This method that I have

found, of using a feigned name, makes it all easy. Well, let those who were born to fortunes, spend them in sloth and ignorance, I have an estate in myself, that can never be exhausted. I am obliged to nature only for my abilities, and carry the fountain of honour and fortune in the fluency of my genius."

He then descended from his aerial citadel, and, going out to visit his patients, changed *me* at a coffee-house, where I was immediately borrowed at the bar by an officer, who was going to dine with his general, and wanted money to give his servants.

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *enters into the service of the gentleman of a General. Gratitude in high and low life. The modern way of rising in the world, and the happiness of dependance. Influence of* CHRYSAL'S *master, with his curious manner of supporting it.*

YOU may judge that my stay with this owner was but short: he gave me directly to the general's *gentlemen*, with a letter to be presented to his excellency next morning, as he could not find courage to speak to him in person.

The case of this person, though not uncommon among men, I own affected me. He was the son of an officer of distinguished merit, the services of whose life had, in the 80th year of it, been rewarded with the command of a regiment, and the hopes of his son crowned with a pair of colours; which, on the death of his father, in six months after his elevation he found to be his whole inheritance; the fees of office, and the equipage for his new rank, having exhausted all the savings of the old man's subaltern frugality.—The most exemplary duty, in five warm campaigns, had advanced the son to the rank of a lieutenant, when the exaltation of the person to whom he now applied, raised his hopes to a company, which was vacant in the regiment, and his right by seniority; for such was his ignorance of mankind, that he built sanguine expectations on the very reasons that

should have deprived him of any, the obligations of the person, to whom he applied to his father, who had taken him up the poor friendless orphan of an ensign, educated him at his own expense, procured him his first commission, and afterwards lent him the money with which he had purchased his company: a debt which the son was weak enough to expect a friendship from, though it, and much more, had long since been cleared at play.

But though the character of the son, and the general's known intimacy with the father, in a manner obliged him to promise him his friendship, yet nothing was farther from his thoughts than ever to do him any real service; as he imagined that would be acknowledging the obligations which his very attendance seemed to upbraid him with: a dinner now and then being the only favour he ever had, or ever meant to give him. You may perhaps have experienced the misery of a dependant's dining at the table of his patron, where the tortures of Tantalus are aggravated by anxiety of giving offence. I shall therefore hasten over this, and the other scenes of that evening, which were but the common occurrences of military greatness, and ended in a deep debauch, as soon as all but the chosen few had retired, to come to the conclusion of my *late* master's story, in which my *present* bore a considerable part.

As soon as the general had slept off the fumes of his wine, and awoke next morning, my master's hour of influence arrived, which he never failed to improve. After a prelude of coughing and spitting, the scene opened thus: "Who's there? William!"—"Sir,"—"William, was not I very drunk last night? my head achs most confoundedly."—"Your excellency was a little cut, but you broke up much the strongest of the company."—"Aye, I wonder at that, I spend myself with talking, when I begin to go, and that helps a man on damnably: that story of the battle, where I was taken prisoner, is a bottle in my way always."—"That foreign gentleman, who never speaks a word, has a great advantage then."—"Aye, so he has, but he is a damned honest fellow, and a very good companion; he always fills a bumper, and never speaks a word.—But my head."—"Perhaps your excellency had better take something."—"No, I have taken too much already; though that's right; give me a glass

of the old Geneva; I am to go to council to-day, and m
settle my head.—Aye, that will do, I am much bet
now; there is nothing like a hair of the old dog."
This conversation continued till he was seated
breakfast, when my master turned to a new topic. "
was very sorry, (said he) that your excellency happene
to sit in last night, as Mrs. Motherly was to call."—
"Why that's true, William, I did not think of one en
gagement when I made the other; and, when she called
me out, I was not in cue; I was too far gone. We old
fellows are not sparrows; the spirit is often willing, when
the flesh is weak; ha, ha, ha!"—"Your excellency is
pleased to be merry, but, to my thinking, the youngest
fellow of the age has not more vigour."—"Aye, William,
do you think so indeed? But why do you think so, Wil-
liam?"—"Because your excellency always chooses such
green things: now I should think a ripe woman would be
better; I am sure she would give less trouble."—"Ha,
ha, ha, why that's your taste; but youth is mine; and
while I have powers (and I do not think mine quite gone
yet) I will please my taste. But what had Mrs. Mo-
therly last night?"—"A very fine girl as your excellency
could wish to see."—"How old?"—"About sixteen."—
"Psha, mellow pears; I loath such trash."—"But Mrs.
Motherly said she could swear she was untouched. She
came from the country but yesterday, a relation of her
own: the poor thing knew nothing of the matter, and
thought she came to be hired for a laundry-maid."—
"Why that is something, but I wish she were younger."
—"If your excellency pleases but to wait a little, I have
one in my eye that will suit your taste exactly; a sweeter
child is not in all England."—"Aye, good William (spit-
ting once or twice, and wriggling in his chair) Aye, that
is something, but how old?"—"Just ten, and finely
grown."—"Right, the right age. That's true! I'll speak
to her very day for that place for your brother. Tell him
to come to-morrow: I will not be refused."—"We are
much obliged to your excellency for your favours."—
"But when shall I see this girl? Give Motherly some ex-
ordinary with her ripe fruit. Sixteen! sixty! paha!"—"Sir,
I shall go about it this very evening. A letter from cap-
tain Standard; will your excellency please to read it?"—
"Read him and his letter: throw it into the fire! Wh

unreasonable scoundrel have? Did I not give
inner yesterday? Has he not been introduced
ompany at my table? If he had any industry or
ith these advantages, he would have learned to
d made his fortune as others do. Since he grows
some on encouragement, I'll starve him into bet-
anners. Bid the porter strike him off the dinner

beg your excellency's pardon, for mentioning him;
he manner I have heard you talk to him, made me
ine you really did design to provide for him; and
ays there is a vacancy in the regiment just now."—
Damn his impudence! a vacancy indeed! I shall never
nk there is a good one till he makes it at Tyburn."
beg your excellency's pardon: I shall never men-
on him more. Would you have me go about the child
his evening? it is a little angel to be sure."—"This a
moment if you think you can succeed."—"I shall try a
any rate: but there is one obstacle."—"What is that
you know I never grudge money on these occasion
How much will do?"—"That is not the difficulty her
money will not do, and I hardly know what will."
"Money not do? Why what the devil can it be,
money will not do?"—"I scarce know how to men
it to your excellency, but the little cherub is niec
captain Standard, his sister's daughter, and, while
in the way, there will be no possibility of getti
her."—"Is that all? then he shall join the regim
morrow."—"But then he will leave such an imp
of your unkindness upon his sister, if there is
done for him, after waiting so long, that it will
possible for any person belonging to you to
cess."—"What would you have me do? I n
bear to have the fellow get a company in my
that would be acknowledging the obligations
impudence to say I received from his father
will bear it."—"I beg your excellency's par
not presume to point out any such thing,
the possession of such a baby (though my
beheld her fellow) is not worth your giving
much trouble about; she is quite too you
well grown"—"You say she is but jus
beauty!"—"I wish your excellenc

: I am unable to describe her."—"But cannot
ay be found out, besides fixing this fellow under
ie?"—"That was just what I was going to take
erty of hinting to your excellency. There are
gentlemen of fortune in the troops just ordered
rica, who have no liking to the voyage. Now,
, with submission, that you would oblige some of
with an exchange into your regiment, and let
Standard go in his place. And this will oblige
o; for I have often heard him wish to go there,
es of rising, when they come into action."—"A
ought, and so I will. Let the fellow go to Amer-
l get scalped; his hot head wants to be cooled:
or wretches as he are just fit to be transported
Tell him to prepare directly! I long to be rid
But when shall I see the dear little creature?"
twenty-four hours after he is gone, I'll undertake
her eating sugar-plumbs, and sobbing in your
It cannot possibly be sooner, for you know the
's spirit, and that he would cut the throat of a
who should dishonour his family, as he calls it."
damn his spirit, that is true; that is what has kept
l to the fellow so long: I know he has all the ro-
madness about honour, and such stuff, that made
of a father live and die a beggar."
his time his *excellency* was dressed to go to
, for which another dram settled his head.
your surprise, at the brutal behaviour of the
and the infamous designs of the man. The for-
beyond aggravation; but the latter were only an
artifice in favour of his friend, who had no such
the world.

CHAP. II.

he history of Mr. WILLIAM. *Some odd circumstances in his conduct accounted for. By a progression equally polite and frugal,* CHRYSAL *comes from his possession into that of a celebrated female.*

WILLIAM was a son of the regiment, born of one of the general wives that followed it. He was about the same age with Standard, who had taken such a liking to him when they were boys, that he shared his allow- ance with him, gave him his old clothes, and taught him what he learned at school. A natural acuteness o genius improved these advantages so well, that Willia could read and write enough for a gentleman; danc fence, and scrape on the violin, before his friend's pa er of serving him was put an end to, by the death of father; and his spirit and appetites were too great ta cept of his offer, of the best support an ensign c spare him, to maintain him as a cadet, till his should get him a commission. But, though he not accept, he did not forget the offer, nor make h ligations a cause of hatred, now that it was in his to make some return; a way of thinking that pro meanness of his birth; for quitting the barren meanness of his birth; through the various military honour, he had turned his genius to the mo ing profession of a footman; through the various which he had risen to his present rank of his ex gentleman; in which he had the unfashionable to return the favours of his former benefac above manner, which his experience and know master's temper convinced him to be th could hope to succeed in. As to his pro child, he was in no pain about that, the son who could contradict whatever e please to give.

There is one circumstance, which I see puzzles you, in the character of this man, and that is his taking *me* from his friend, when he must be sensible how badly he could spare such a sum. But you must consider the power of nature when strengthened by habit.

From his mother, William had inherited venality, which the bribery of vails, in his present profession, had confirmed beyond all possibility of correction; so that it was no more in his power to refuse a guinea when offered to him, than to change his stature or complexion. An attention to this observation would take off the wonder, and ease the world from the trouble of the exclamations that are daily made against the rapacity of persons in office, for, as such are generally taken from the class of William, it cannot be expected but they must act from the same natural principles with him.

I see the depravity of human nature, when stripped of disguise and ornament, affects your unexperienced heart too strongly. But consider, that we see things as they really are, and to represent them otherwise to you would invert the design of my mission, and confirm, rather than remove the prejudices that lead astray the mind of man.

However this consolation I can give you, that the vices I have already drawn, and may hereafter draw to your view, are not particular to this age or country: they are the weeds which, in every age and clime, have always, and always will, overrun the human heart.

Nor is it just to call them vices (though in compliance with the language of men I do call them so) which *perhaps* are but* necessary parts of this universal system; and though, in a particular instance, and viewed by themselves, they may appear deformed, yet, when thrown into the general representation of things, they may have their beauty and use, if only to diversify the scene: and, with respect to men in particular, be as† advantageous to the community as they are prejudicial to individuals.

But to return to my master William. Beside the ad-

* *From hence it should seem, the hint of a late treatise, on the origin of evil, was borrowed, or else dictated by the same spirit.*

† *Fable of the Bees.*

vantages of education, he had such from nature, that he was not only the most accomplished gentleman, but also the handsomest fellow of his time; an happiness, of which he availed himself so well in the *polite* world, that he was the favourite of all the *compliant* fair, who shared with him the pleasures they only suffered from his superiors for hire.

Of this I saw sufficient proof that very evening, when he went to an assignation with the most celebrated courtesan of the age; who, sacrificing avarice to pleasure, gave orders to be denied to every body, and shut herself up with him, to give a loose to joy for the evening.

This was a scene too sensual for a spirit to describe: I shall therefore only say, that their fatigue and waste of spirits were recruited with the highest delicacies and richest wines, and the pauses of joy enlivened with the recital of the adventures of their professions, heightened with the most poignant ridicule of those whose folly was *their* fortune.

Before satiety could pall their pleasures, time summoned them to business. The fair, to prepare for the reception of her *friend;* and *my* master to wait on *his;* when, to conclude the evening with proper gallantry, he presented me to the maid at the door.

I was a good deal surprised, at being received with less emotion by this portress of *Venus* than I had ever found before; the sight of me having always raised joy. But this was soon explained, when, on returning to her mistress, she threw me on the table, and received a shilling in exchange. An instance of that methodical economy, which by many small savings makes up for one large expense, and extracts profit even from pleasure.

The joy of the mistress seemed to make amends to my vanity for the indifference of her maid, and promised me the full possession of her heart; but I soon found myself mistaken, and that her love for me was only while I was *the* property of another; for no sooner did I become her *own, than* she threw me carelessly into her purse, and *turned her* thoughts immediately to the acquisition of *more. But*, though I lost the greatest part of my power *over her*, by coming into her possession, I still found *ample* room in her heart for my abode.

The apartments were scarce got in order, and my mistress new dressed, when her friend appeared, to whom she flew with all the appearance of rapture. But, however he might be deceived, the difference was plain to me, between the joyless caresses she sold to him, and the ecstacy she shared with my late master, the glow of whose kisses yet reeked upon her lips. Nor was this strange: the ardour of her lover met her half-way, and communicated as much fire as it received; but with her keeper the case was quite otherwise: all the advances were to come from her; all her caresses were a duty; nor were the tenderest she could bestow, able to warm him to the least return.

You wonder that a person in such circumstances should be at the expense and trouble of keeping a mistress, whose extravagance was to be equalled only by her insolence. But this is only a small instance of the tyranny of fashion: and how will your astonishment be increased, when I tell you, that this very man, in the prime of life, was remarkable for the coolness of his constitution, and now in its decline was married to a beautiful young lady, whose resentment at his conjugal neglect rose so high, as to charge it to inability.

Whether this was really the case, and that he kept my mistress to hide it, as a failing tradesman sets up a a coach, or whether the passion remained, but so feebly supported, as to require the lascivious blandishments of a prostitute, I cannot determine, as I was never in his possession, to take a view of his heart.

CHAP. III.

The manner in which CHRYSAL'S *new mistress r and took care of her friend. How she employ self while he was asleep. Her management, next morning.*

IT was about two in the morning when my mistr ceived him drunk and stupified with play, at wh had lost deeply that night. On his coming in room, he threw himself into a chair, without sa word, or showing the least sensibility of her ca where after some time he fell fast asleep, which n tress no sooner perceived, than calling her maid dress and roll him into bed; "Here, Jane, (sai take my place by this heap of mortality. I'll step street; perhaps the company may not be all gone ver fear, I'll ensure you from a rape! He wants r in a bedfellow but to keep him warm, and you that, while I pass my night better than in nursing firmities: I'll be home before he stirs."

Jane obeyed her mistress, who slipped into a and went away directly to an house, where she piddle away her leisure hours with any chance cust rather than be idle.

About five ended this scene, in the rites of wh mistress bore a distinguished part. I shall not a to describe these mysteries: they were too gross relation, as well as your conception, in your mortified habit. She then returned home, and her pure body in her maid's place, beside her *who* had not stirred yet, her fatigues soon threw *to a sleep* as sound as his.

It was noon before these fond lovers awoke: was my mistress, who, enraged that any thin bore the name of man, should show so little of her charms, resolved to teaze him with en

which, as he was seldom in a humour to return in kind, he never failed to pay for in a more substantial manner.

When she had awoke him with her toying, the syren thus began her song: "How can my dearest sleep so long, when his little girl lies languishing by his side! O turn, and let me lay my head on that dear bosom."—"Ha! what is it o'clock?" (replied the lover, yawning, and rubbing his eyes)—"Alas I know not! I have told so many tedious hours, that I have forgot them: but what is time to us, who only live to love?"—"Past 12! I must be gone! some business!"—"Business; leave that for duller souls, who have no taste for pleasure; can you leave love and me for business?"—"I am sorry I happened to oversleep myself, my dear; I believe I was bewitched to drink so much; but we'll make it up another time."—"So you say always; but that other time will never come: but I will not be served so; I am flesh and blood, whatever other people may be; and you yourself know, it is not for want of friends I keep myself up, thus, like a nun, for you; and all, I do not know for what!"—"Is the girl mad? Do not I give you every thing you want, every thing you desire?"—"No, nor any thing I desire! I desire now—So you will get up and leave me: I will not be used thus: you have got some other woman: but I here give you fair warning, that I will be even with you! Sir George was here yesterday; and so was the young lord—but I would not see either of them: and I am well requited now: but I know where to send to them. I will not be made a fool of every way, for nothing; and so you may sleep where you please, I care not."—"Come, my dear, let us not fall out for nothing; you have not shown me the diamond ear-rings you got last week,"—"No, my dear, they are not come home."—"I thought you told me they were finished when I gave you the money to pay for them."—"They were so; but, when he brought them home, I did not like them. The jeweller told me, they were not so fine as those he made for your lady, some time ago; so I sent them back, and ordered him to make me a pair that should be as good as hers at least.—"Not good enough, child! were they not to cost 150*l.*!"—"And what is 150*l.*?—Sir Richard gave his girl a pair that cost 500; but if you think these are too dear, you are not obliged to pay for them: there is another who will be glad to do it."—"And pray wh

are these fine ones to cost?"—"Why—only—but kiss me first—only 200*l.* But then I have bespoke a necklace with them."——"Zounds, a diamond necklace?"——"And what mighty matter is a diamond necklace? Pray has not your wife one? But I see how it is; you think any thing good enough for me: and nothing good enough for her; but every one does not think so: I am not at a loss."—"Well, you saucy little minx; and what do they all come to?"—"Another kiss, and I'll tell you: why—don't frown; or I won't tell you at all;—only 500*l.*"—"500 devils; that's more than my wife's cost by 100."—"And do not you love me 100 times better than your wife? I have given up thousands for you. But, as I said before, you need not pay for them, if you do not choose it: there are others who will: I see I am slighted; and I deserve it, for slighting so many good offers: but I will not always be a fool!"—"Well, my dear, for this one time I will humour you: give me the pen and ink: but you must not expect that I shall ever gratify your extravagance so far again."—"I thank you my lord: I shall not trouble you again this great while." "But what is this? 350*l.*! you have made a mistake, my lord; I told you 500*l.*"—"Well, child, did I not give you 150*l.* to pay for the other pair?"—"Yes, my lord; but that was not to pay for this pair though, you know these are dearer."—"But that and this will." "I am afraid not."—"How so, child; do not 150 and 350 make 500?"—"Indeed I am a poor accountant; but I know it will not do."—"No! why so; I do not understand you:"—"I'll kiss you first, and then I'll tell you."—Psha; cease fooling; I am in haste; I must go to court; and have scarce time to dress: where is the 150*l.*?"—"There" (kissing him)—"Where?"—"Gone, as that kiss is; all gone, and only the relish left behind, to give an appetite for more."—"Infernal jade! (aside)—"What do you say, my lord?"—"That I cannot, will not bear such extravagance."—"I am glad I know your mind, my lord: then, if you do not, somebody else will, who will not make such a stir about trifles."—"Well, give me that bill."—"No, thank you, my dear."—"Why so?"—"For fear you should be a bold boy, and not return it. If you please to give me the other 150*l.* I'll get the necklace and ear-rings not, this will serve for some other use."—"Dam

tion! and then I must give it to her all over again" (aside)—"Well, my lord; you said you were in haste, and so am I."—"Give me the pen and ink: there it is, you little termagant: but once more let me caution you against such extravagance for the future."—"And once more, let me tell you, my lord, not to give yourself such airs: extravagance! they that will have delicacies, must pay for them: and, if you think the price too dear, there are more customers in the market; and so, my lord, like it, or like it not, I will be supported; and more than that, what I want in pleasure, shall be made up in profit: let wives save, who may be the better for the savings, our business is to make hay while the sun shines."—"Come, my dear; let us have no disputes: you have the money now, next time we will clear off the other score: give me a kiss, I'll call in the evening, and take a dish of tea with you: farewell."—"Good morrow—(after he is gone) for an old impotent, poor-spirited letcher, that must be treated like a dog to make you know your duty. What fool would ever be at the trouble of behaving well to any fellow, when she can, so much better, mould him to her pleasure by ill usage?"

CHAP. IV.

The history and character of CHRYSAL'S *mist gives him to a noted matron. Some accou new mistress, and her manner of managin ily.*

THIS principle she acted up to, for two d was in her possession, without any other varia conduct, than just what was necessary to wo various tempers of her lovers, making no real between them, except it was, that she always worst, who used her best.

I have often told you, that sensuality is dis to a spiritual being. I therefore longed to qu tress, the succession of whose amours was s and quick, that I was astonished how nature c a fund of love for them all, in so young a cr she was not 20 years old.—I see you have a c know the history of this young votary of Venu you think there must be something extraordi you are deceived; it contains nothing but c currences.

She was the daughter of trade's people, in circumstances, whose foolish fondness, becau a pretty, smart child, gave her an education rank, in hopes of her making her fortune by n

This raised the vanity, natural to the femal high, that she despised her own station; and so fortunate as immediately to climb to the o sired, by the way proposed, she fell an easy *the first seducer* who promised it, in any oth

Thus the accomplishments, by which the *tenderness of her* parents meant to raise he *higher than* their own, became the cause o *into that of* the lowest of all human beings:

deplorable in itself, yet unaffecting to her, as the time, in which her mind should have been formed to virtue, was given up to the nourishing that vanity which proved her ruin; so that she is absolutely insensible of the wretchedness of her condition, and never has the pursuit of her most infamous profession been disturbed by a moment's remorse.

I told you of her spending the hours that were unemployed at home, at an house in————street, where she was always sure of business. Though this venerable mansion was dedicated to the mysterious rites of unrestrained love, yet, as the priests of all temples expect to live by the offerings made at them, her conscience would not permit the priestess of this to break through an ordinance so long established, and she exacted fees from the votaries of her's: not indeed a tythe, indiscriminately from all, whether they received benefit from their devotion, or not; but always in proportion to the fruits they reaped.

At this shrine was I offered, the third night of my being in the possession of this young devotee, when the plenteousness of her gain, from a multitude of lovers, seemed to her piety to merit so rich a return.

I now entered into a much more extensive scene than my last, the prostitution of which made but a small part of the business of the profession. But what I have related in the history of my late mistress, shall suffice for that branch, nor shall I give more than some outlines of the horrors of the rest.

My new mistress had originally been of the sisterhood of my last, who, having fallen a prey to lust, almost in her infancy, and having no beauty, nor any thing but extreme youth to recommend her, as soon as that was worn out, neglect obliged her to apply to other business for bread, and her natural turn determining her to this, as well as the outrageous virtue of the undiscovered part of her own sex, excluding her from every other, she changed her occupation from yielding, to providing pleasure, in which her success was so great, that she soon became the most eminent of her profession.

It was near five in the morning when I changed my service; and, business being ended, my late mistress having reigned sole mistress of the night, and seen

all the company, there remained nothing to do, after she went home, but to see the inmates to their truckle-beds in the cocklofts, where stripping off every part, not only of the finery, but even of the comforts of dress, they were crowded three or four together, to keep each other warm, under a ragged coverlet on a bare mattress, where their shudderings and groans made a just contrast to the spirited wickedness of their conversation some hours before.

This was always the fate of those who were not so successful in the evening as to earn the price of a better bed, above the fees of the house, and hire of clothes.

These happy few were treated with fondness, while they squandered their poor peculium in a drop of cordial to settle their heads, and were lodged in apartments suited to their purses; though the night before perhaps they had experienced the same fate with their sisters above stairs, and knew they must expect it again the next, if unsuccessful in their business.

When matters were thus settled, this happy family disposed themselves to take the best repose which disease in mind and body would permit.

An active spirit disdains rest. Though debauchery had anticipated old age, in the constitution of my mistress, yet her application to business made her refuse nature even necessary indulgence. She was ready to go out before ten that morning, when the modest decency of her dress and appearance were such as drew the general good opinion, and would almost deceive the devil himself, on whose most favourite service she was going.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's *mistress pays a visit to the last place she could have been suspected for going to. She meets a young lady, with whom, by an artifice, she goes home. Her scheme to ensnare the lady.*

IF a judgment were to be formed for the whole day, from the manner of beginning it, my mistress should have spent her's most happily; her first visit being to church, where the piety of her behaviour was an edification to the devout matrons, who, having nothing to do at home, meet there regularly, to compare their aches and dreams of the night before, and enjoy the innocent amusement of a little gossiping over the affairs of their neighbours.

But her devotion wasted not itself so fruitlessly: her industry had formed expectations of drawing considerable advantage from it, and so anticipating futurity, and making sure of the reward here, which others waited for in another world.—The immediate motive of her devotion, this morning, was to see a young lady, with whom she had commenced an acquaintance at this church, and who constantly attended divine service there. You are surprised how she could think of going to such a place, on such an errand; but the wolf roams about for prey every where, and is often most successful, where his attempts are least suspected: though I must rob her industry of the merit of design in the first introduction to this affair.

Going through St. Martin's-Lane one morning, about a *month* before, she was so struck with the appearance of a lovely young creature, in widow's weeds, who was going into the church, that she followed her; where the

fervency with which she poured out her soul i
tion, gave such a lustre to her beauty, and made
so lovely through her grief, that my mistress i
ately marked her for her list, not doubting t
should be able to turn her distress to such advan
should bring her into her measures, and make he
ty yield her a rich return for her pains, from s
her customers. If you consider the nature of
kind, you will not wonder at this instance of th
gacy of my mistress. They are ever in extremes
the best or worst of human creatures.—From
she dogged her to her lodging, in a little court
she lived with a poor, but honest family, in suc
cy, that no one in the neighbourhood could give
count of her.

Real virtue shines with a lustre that dazzles t
confirmed vice, and keeps it at an awful distanc
mistress, hardened as she was in all the ways of
impudence, dared not to go directly to her
some business or introduction: but, as she had no
her ready genius prompted her to win her good
under an appearance of religion, and then an a
ance would come easily.

She was not deceived in her expectations
mornings constant attendance at church, and th
plary warmth of her devotions, struck the eye, an
ed the heart of unexperienced innocence to the a
ance she wished for, which she did not fail to i
by the same arts, to some degree of intimacy.

In this situation they were, when she went, b
out any appearance of design, to meet her this n
at church, as usual. As they came out togeth
mistress, turning with her fair friend, said she h
business into Long-Acre, and asked her, if s
that way; to which the young lady innocently
ed, that she did, and should be glad to walk with

As they walked together, my mistress tur
conversation on the wicked ways of the town, an
cularly the many base designs that were laid to
unwary innocence, adding, that all the pleasur
sensuality could give the most luxurious heart

the design she was then going upon, of relieving the distresses of a worthy family.

She had timed her discourse so as to say these words, just as she came to the entrance of the court, in which she knew the widow lived, when, feigning to slip, she fell all along, crying out, as in the utmost agony, that she had wrenched her ancle.

The lady, raising her with the greatest tenderness, expressed her concern for the unhappy accident, and desired she would submit to be helped into her lodgings, which fortunately were at the next door, where, though she could be but poorly accommodated, she might be more at her ease than in a more sumptuous place, and should have all the care in her power. This was just what my mistress had schemed for, who, courteously accepting of the offer, made a shift to limp in, without any other assistance than her's.

It raised my indignation to see the tenderness, with which the beautiful young creature pulled off her shoe and stocking, and chafed her ancle, thrown away upon so unworthy an object, as it did my abhorrence to hear the counterfeit shrieks and groans of my mistress, and the assurance with which she attributed the swellings caused by debauchery to this immediate accident.

This affrighted the young lady so, that she in a manner forced her to send for a surgeon, which with much entreaty she yielded to do, but it must be for a friend of her own, a gentleman who lived a considerable way off, at the polite end of the town, for she could not think of letting any common low-lived fellow come near her.

Upon this, a porter was directly despatched for her own surgeon, and in the meantime, as she began to grow easier, she recovered her spirits, and renewed the conversation that had been broken off by this accident.

"I was telling you, my dear friend, (said she) for so I shall ever call you from this moment, your kindness having completed the conquest which your beauty had before made of my heart, I was telling you, that I was going to visit a family this morning, where I promised myself the highest joy that a human heart is capable of *feeling*, in lightening the distress of the virtuous, by *sharing* with them some of that wealth which Heaven *has abundantly* blessed me with, and which can ju

be applied to no other use, than making this grateful return to that goodness which bestowed it.

"But my heart was too elate with the thought, and I receive this accident as a caution from Heaven not to flatter myself with any thing so strongly for the future. But, though I could not have this pleasure myself, the benefit shall not be delayed to them. I will make you my almoner; an office that I know will suit the goodness of your heart. You shall give this packet, which will put an end to all their distresses."

"Oh madam! your good opinion is the greatest honour to me, (replied the lady) and I hope I shall never forfeit it, especially in this commission, which I shall undertake with the most sincere joy; but pray, dear madam, who are the persons to whom I must dispense your goodness?"

"That's true, my dear, (returned my mistress) I should give you some account of them, that you may be the better able to judge of the joy I feel in serving them. It is the widow of an officer, who has been killed in this war, and left her with three poor babes, destitute of every support, but the allowance of the government, which, wretched as it is, and only aggravating misery by barely prolonging life under it, is often grasped for by the hungry mouth in vain, where interest is wanting to procure the immediate relief of it, as was her unhappy case; so that they must have actually perished for want of food, had not providence brought them into my knowledge, seemingly by the greatest accident, about six months ago, since when, I have myself afforded them the necessary comforts of life, and have also made such interest for them, with some of my friends, that I have here got them a grant of a pension, on the Irish establishment, sufficient to bring up the children, and make the remainder of the mother's days happy; for, my dear, I never do any thing by halves—Good God, child! what is the matter with you? what do you weep so for?"—

"*Nothing*, dear madam, (replied the lady) nothing; *I only sympathize* in the distress of the poor widow."—"*But, my* dear, that distress is now at an end."—"O madam, *let me* carry her the blessing! let me not delay her *happiness* a moment! Who knows but her heart is

nute bursting with the dreadful apprehensions of
or herself and her dear infants!"—"With all my
madam; but you will please to order a chair to
ed to carry me home, when you go; for I cannot
ere alone."—"Dear madam, forgive my rudeness;
your pardon, pray forgive me: the distress of the
put every thing out of my head; indeed it did;
xcuse me."—"Excuse you, my dear, I honour
art that feels another's wo; you shall go directly;
hall be the messenger of glad tidings to them.
ıy dearest young lady, give me leave to tell you,
fear you have not answered me sincerely; I fear
ears flow from some other cause, than mere sym-
; speak, my child! does any thing affect your
eart? Can I any way be serviceable to you? Com-
me freely, and make me happy in serving one for
my heart has conceived so tender an esteem!
as you would to your own mother, and wrong
r friendship with a doubt."—"O madam, madam!
d the mourner, as soon as sobbing permitted ut-
e) I have no mother to make my complaint to:
he wretched widow you have described! A widow
it support, without friends, or any other hope,
ust in Heaven!"—"And Heaven will raise you
, my dearest child! Heaven has raised you a
in me! You shall be my child! I look upon you
own! as a gift from Heaven, from this moment!
ıall leave this place this very day! it is not fit for
ild! I will take a lodging for you, near myself,
nephew, who is lately come to town to see me,
ome; and then you shall live with me for ever."
ing these words, she threw her arms round her
ed victim, and wiped away the tears that flowed
her cheeks, while a variety of passions filled her
heart almost to bursting.

CHAP. VI.

The history of the young lady. She is critically interrupted by the arrival of an unexpected person. She is reconciled to her father, who rewards the woman of the house, and resolves to punish the bawd.

WHEN she had recovered herself a little, my mistress thus resumed her lore, "Weep not, my dearest child, all will be well. And have you any dear little infants too?"—"Oh no! my wretchedness, thank Heaven, is all my own!"—"But may I, my dear, ask your name, and the circumstances of your story! I would know all, that nothing may be unredressed."——"You are all goodness, madam! My story, alas, has few circumstances, and they are all distresses! I lost my mother while I was yet a child: my father left me in the country to the care of a governess, the wife of his chaplain, who educated me in the sentiments of piety and virtue. When I was scarce fourteen, I returned the love of her son, the most deserving and most lovely of his sex, who was two years older than me: but, young as we were, we concealed our passion, till my father obtained him a commission in the army; when, on the regiment's being ordered to America, I yielded to his fears of losing me, and consented to a private marriage, which was soon discovered by a letter's falling into my father's hands, who, in his rage, turned my husband's father, and mother, and me, out of doors, nor would ever see us more. A small vicarage afforded us a present support. My mother-in-law soon died; the suspicion of her having betrayed the confidence of my father, and been instrumental in my marriage, breaking her heart; as did the account of my husband's death, his father's. I then was left quite destitute; and have

the least hope of relief in this world, till your goodness has, this day, taken compassion on me."—"And what is your father's name, my dear."—"That I have never yet revealed, as I would willingly hide the disgrace, my distress may be thought to him; but with you I need not use that caution; his name is ——"

Just at this word, the surgeon who had been sent for to my mistress, entered, and presented a new scene.

At the first sight of this person, the young lady gave a great shriek, and swooned away. The gentleman stood a moment stupified with astonishment, when, turning hastily to my mistress, "Is this the lady?" (said he) "Aye, and a lovely one she is, (answered she) but help me to raise her up, when you will see her better; she has been just telling me her story, and the grief of it has overcome her! it is a moving one; and she must be our own."

"Oh, my child! my child!" (exclaimed he in a transport) and, spurning my mistress from her with his foot, raised her himself, and leaned her head upon his bosom, kissing her, and almost smothering her with his tears. "Oh, my poor child! what have you escaped! what have you endured!"

It is impossible to describe the situation of my mistress at this scene. She saw the error she had been guilty of, in introducing a woman to whom she was a stranger; and was aware of the danger, with which the horror of such an interview, on such an occasion, threatened her. While therefore, the father seemed wrapped in an ecstacy, that made him as insensible as his daughter, she thought it her best way to retire from the first burst of his anger, and forgetting her sprained ancle, was going directly away; but he perceived her intent, and calling her with a voice that nailed her to the ground, "stir not, upon your life, (said he) I will have this whole mystery cleared up."

His daughter, just then opening her eyes, and finding herself laid upon her father's bosom, love, respect, duty, fear, and joy, filled her heart with such a variety of passions, that she sunk under their weight, and swooned again.

This embarrassed the father almost to distraction, till the woman of the house coming in, with her assis-

she was at length recovered, for my mistress was so terrified, that she did not dare to approach her.

As soon as the lady had lightened her heart by a flood of tears, she threw herself at her father's feet, unable either to look up, or speak to him. Moved with the mute eloquence of her grief, and melting in the warmth of nature, he raised her from the ground, and spoke to her in these words: "Be comforted, my child! I am! I will be your father! But tell me what has passed between you and this vile woman!" "Oh sir, is she not my best, my only friend? Has she not restored me to your love?" "Have a care, child! she your friend? then you are lost beyond recovery indeed! She is a reproach to her sex! to human nature!" "Oh sir! how can that be; did she not bring you here to me? does not that show her virtue, and compassion to my distress?" "Compose yourself a little, child! it is true, she brought me here; but tell me, I charge you, on what terms she told you I was to come; and how she came to interest herself in your affairs! Fear not, but speak the truth."

On this she told him the whole of her acquaintance with my mistress, and by what accident, and in what character she imagined he had been sent for; but that, as soon as she saw *him* enter the room, she thought my mistress must have been acquainted with her story, and had taken this method of introducing her to him, in hopes the surprise, and sight of her distress, might operate on his compassion.

Truth forces conviction. He was satisfied with the account she gave him; and taking her again in his arms, "I have found you again, my child, (said he) and I will never lose you more! Be the errors of your youth, be my severity forgotten! From henceforth you are *my* child, and I will be *your* father! as to that vile wretch, know, that her whole acquaintance with you, was sought with a premeditated design of betraying you to ruin. She told me the whole, nearly as you have done; and, encouraged by your distress, of which she had gotten some *general hints*, but ignorant who you were, she laid the *scheme of this* pretended accident, to get admission *into your house*: for she well knew where you lived; and *then sent for* me to a place I had appointed, that I might *come and see* you, under the appearance of a surgeon;

that, if I liked you, I might have the preference of her interest in you: for so deep had she laid her scheme, that you could not have escaped her; the trial would have been too great for human fortitude! and this most execrable mystery of iniquity did she undertake for the paltry reward of 50*l.* which I must take the shame upon myself to own, I had promised her, little imagining that I was bargaining for the seduction of my own innocent child. But I see, I acknowledge the hand of Heaven in the whole affair, that has thus opened my eyes to the danger of such a licentious course of life, and made the the recovery of my child the means, and the reward of my conversion!

"Weep not, my dear; justly may you turn your eyes with detestation from such a fiend: But I shall take care that she meets a just reward; while you prepare to go home with me, for I will not leave you a moment in this scene of horror." "Oh, mercy, mercy, my lord! (cried my mistress) have mercy on me! nor overwhelm with your anger a wretched creature, whose remorse is a load too great to bear." "Away, vile wretch, (replied he, in a rage) nor dare to speak another word! and here fellow, (calling to the porter who had directed him to the house) bring me the parish-constable."

While the porter went for him, my mistress, wretched now indeed, her guilty fear magnifying her danger, stood trembling, but afraid to essay his pity with another word.

After he had walked a turn or two about the room, his daughter entered, and with her the woman of the house with her little effects, which were soon packed up; at the sight of them his countenance softened: "Well, my dear, (said he to his daughter) I see you are ready to come with me; but I must wait a moment to do justice to the wretch who brought me hither. Plead not for her! I would not have you ever sue to me in vain, again; and any thing in her favour I cannot yield! But my justice shall not be only severe, nor confined to her alone. You have said that this honest woman has been a friend to you! she shall be rewarded. Here, good woman, is the sum of money I was to have given this vile creature for my daughter in another sense. Take it, as the reward of your honesty and kindness to her

and call on her every year of your life for the same sum."

The poor woman took it with a reverence, but was unable to speak her gratitude, her heart was so full, while his daughter dropped suddenly on her knees, and raising her hands and eyes to Heaven, exclaimed in rapture, "Oh pour thy blessings, Heaven, on his head, who thus dispenses happiness on all who merit it." As she said these words, the constable came, into whose charge his lordship gave my mistress, to be taken to a justice of the peace, whither he appointed to follow her; and then handed his daughter into a coach, in which he took her directly home.

CHAP. VII.

The address of CHRYSAL'S *mistress, and civility of a constable. She arrives at the justice's, and is sifted and softened by his clerk, and terrified by his worship.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

As soon as this happy couple were gone, my mistress recovered her spirits, and smiled with contempt, at a danger she had often gone through before, without harm. "And so, (says she) master constable, I am given in charge to you! and for what pray? But I am no such novice, as to yield myself a prisoner, till I see proper authority to hold me; therefore, sir, I shall wish you a good morning: if you please, you may go tell his lordship, that I was not at leisure to wait for him, at the justice's; and, because you may be dry after your walk, here is a crown to drink my health."

"I thank you mistress, (replied the magistrate, taking the money) but, in the mean time, you must come! I am sorry I cannot let you go." "Cannot let me go! pray, sir, where is your authority to keep me?" "Here, mistress!" (producing his staff) "But your warrant?"—"Oh! as for that, I'll make bold to do without one this time, and take you to the justice on my own authority, and his lordship's request; and so, mistress, you had bet-

ter come along, for I am in haste: you may have a coach if you please." "Aye, so I will to carry me home! and here is something for you to pay the coachman, (putting a guinea into his hand)." "'Tis very well, mistress, I will see you safe home, to be sure, if you desire it, and the justice gives you leave; for to him we must go directly." "Then give me my money; and be assured you shall answer for this false imprisonment." "Your money, mistress! why, aye! so I will, if I do not earn it." "Then let me go home this moment." "No, no, mistress! that I cannot do, till you have been to visit his worship; and then I will see you safe home, if he gives me leave, and drink your health into the bargain; and that was what you gave me the money for: come, come, mistress! one of your trade should know better things, than to ask for money back again! Have I not showed you all the *civility* in my power? Do you think I would stand preaching with you here this hour for nothing! come along, the coach is at the door."

I saw you were surprised at the address and turn of expression in my mistress's conversation with this young lady, before the arrival of her father, as above her sphere; but nature had given her a capacity equal to any thing, and her intercourse with the polite world had gained her an ease of behaviour, and elegance of expression, that made every condition of life seem natural to her. As to the story of the family, whom she was going to relieve, she had actually prepared one of her confederates to have acted that part, so that the lord might justly say, her design was laid so well, that it was next to impossible for her to miss of success. For, by this deceit, she would have gained the young lady's confidence, to receive favours from her, and, when she had her in her debt, she thought she could make her own terms.

As soon as my mistress and her conductor were come into the antechamber of justice, the clerk, recognizing her, addressed her thus: "Good-morrow, mistress.—Pray what has got us the favour of your company? You have been so great a stranger of late, that I was beginning to think we had lost you."—"Pray, Sir, (said she) let me speak a word with you in the next room."—which he ordered her to be shown in, and only waited

ask the constable, by whom and for what she w
there, who was able to give him no other answe
that the lord had ordered him to bring her, and
would follow himself directly.

Having got this full information, the clerk ca
the room to my mistress, and told her, with a
importance and concern, that he was sorry to se
so bad an account.—"So bad an account, Sir? (s
why! pray what do you think I am brought h
nothing in this world! they can charge me with
but intention; and I hope that is not punishabl
law!"—"I hope it will appear so, (replied he) but
ging up his shoulders) my lord has sent a messa
that has another appearance!"—"And pray, S
does my lord charge me with?"—"You'll excus
vealing the secrets of a privy-counsellor! He
here too soon, I am afraid, to tell you himself."

Versed as my mistress was in all the wiles of
look and manner of his saying these words alar
conscious fears. "Pray, Sir, (said she) what
lordship said? or, if you do not think proper t
that, at least, you can direct me how to make
defence against his design! I shall not be un
you know I never was."—"Why that's true, ma
plied he) and indeed I should take great pleasur
ing you, and getting you out of this *hole*, but
you know, is a great man, and can, in a manner,
he pleases with poor people."—"Pray, Sir, ca
a word to the justice?"—"I fear he is engaged j
besides, it is so long since he has seen or heard f
that I believe you must expect but little fav
him."—"Why that is the very thing I would
him about; and believe me it was my busines
early this morning, till I was delayed by this
accident."—"As for that matter, you know you
any thing to me, as well as to him, and I can tell
"That is true, why, all I have to say to him, at
is to beg his acceptance of these five guineas fo
favours, and his advice how to get out of thi
and pray do you take these three for your tr
am sorry I have no more to offer, but really
are very bad, and little or no money stirring
gentlemen; besides, all my ladies have b

lucky of late, and the doctor, you know, must be alwa paid in hand."—"I am sorry things go so badly wi you; I will speak to the justice, and let you know wha he says, and you may depend on my friendship and in terest at all times; though I am afraid this is a very bad affair. I will go to him directly and return to you as soon as possible."

I here left my mistress to her meditations, having been one of the pieces she had given to the clerk. You may imagine I was glad to leave such a service, though I could not promise myself much pleasure, besides variety, in the exchange, from what I had already seen of that, which I was entering into.

The justice was in his office, busied in examining the informations of some of his people, who had made some lucky *hits* the evening before. On a wink from his clerk, they were all ordered to withdraw, when reaching *me*, and four more of my brethren, to his worship; "here, Sir, (said he) five guineas from Mrs.——"—"So, then, (replied he) she has thought proper to come at last."—"To come, no, no, Sir! she has been brought, or else I believe you would have hardly seen her."—"The ungrateful jade: but what is the matter now?"—"I really cannot well tell; nor does the constable know any more, than my lord——ordered him to bring her, and bid that he should follow himself."—"My lord? then I must be ready to receive him properly: he is a great man: quick! reach me my green velvet cap, red slippers, and new gown, and open half a score of those books, the largest of them, and lay them on that great table, as if I had been referring. There! now I look like a justice! and bid those gentry, I was speaking to, go backwards as my lord is gone: he must not see such faces; they might prejudice him against us; and he is a great man: now I'll open the *new justice*, and his lordship may come as soon as he pleases."

Just as all things were thus prepared for his lordship's reception, in proper formality, a servant brought a note to him, to let his worship know, he could not come *all that morning*, but desired he would take proper care of the woman he had ordered to be taken before him, who kept an house of bad fame in such a stree

where, upon the least inquiry, he could no
sufficient matter against her, from her neigh
Though his lordship's not coming was a
ment to his worship, after the preparations h
to receive him; and balked him of an impor
tisement for the next morning; yet the gene
of his note gave him some consolation, as it
to authorize any measures he might please
squeeze the criminal before him.—"This n
he to his clerk) this may do something: b
proceed with caution, or Mrs.——is an ol
her be called in; I'll *soften* her a little first, a
may work upon her after as you please."
As soon as she came in, his worship a
thus:—"So, mistress; this is a fine affair; I
your doings would come to, at last; I have o
you; but you would take no advice; and n
the consequence!—Do, make her *mittimus!*
upon his lordship; and I cannot go till sh
ted!"—"Committed! dear your worship, fo
I be committed? I have done nothing."—"
sure, you have done nothing! his lordship v
cute you so severely for nothing: Look at
do you know this hand-writing? His lordsh
given me an account of the whole affair, and
I would proceed against you, with the utmost r
law! I have already sent to search your hou
This word completed the terrors, into whi
of his lordship's well-known hand had throv
deprived her of all resolution and presence o
burst into tears, and throwing herself on
"Oh, good your worship! dear Mr. Clerk (s
vise me: assist me to get over this misfortu
my watch; it cost 50*l.* at a pawn-broker's
ago; it is a repeater! take it, Mr. Justice!
here are my rings! they are the only valua
have: take them, and help me out at this dea
and stop the people from going into my po
shall be blown up! the gentlemen will all d
shall be ruined, just when I have brought th
tle bearing: help me but this once, and I n
you cause to complain of me again: I

CHAP. VIII.

She is discharged on proper bail. The labours of CHRYSAL'S *new master, in the service of the public, with some of the various mysteries of his office.*

THE work was now done, and a wink having settled the *cue* between the justice and his clerk, the latter began thus: "If I may presume to advise your worship, though this is a very bad affair to be sure, yet as it is not quite felony, by the statute, I am humbly of opinion, that if bail could be got."—"Dear Mr. Clerk, I am obliged to you."—"But then consider, my Lord is a great man."—"That is true, please your worship; but the law is greater than any man, and the law is very tender of the liberty of the subject, and says expressly in the statute, *In favore libertatis*, that no person shall be confined that can get bail; and besides, who knows, if she was at liberty, but she might find means to be reconciled to his lordship; and so all would be well."—"Dear Mr. Clerk that is true; I could easily be reconciled to him; I know how to gain his favour, when his anger is a little cooled."—"Why, Mrs. if you are quite sure of that, I believe we may venture to bail you: but where are your friends?—"Dear your worship, I have no friends; I have nothing to make friends with; I throw myself upon you, gentlemen!"—"Why really this is a nice case, but, if you'll step into the next room, we will consider what can be done for you."—"Oh! but send and stop the men that went to my *house!*"—"Never fear, they were not to go without further *orders.*" When she was gone out, "Well, (said the justice) this has been a good *hit*, it makes up for the bad *week*: but cannot you guess what this matter is?". 'Not a word of it, (replied the clerk) she has not d ed a syllable herself, that could let me the least in

and I would not discover my ignorance by asking her any questions. But I suppose it is only some trick she has played my lord about a girl, for you know she has often told us, that he was one of her best customers, and boasted of his protection; and if it is no more than that, as I imagine, he will think no more of it, and so the best way is to let her go, for indeed we cannot keep her, if we would; though to keep up the form, for fear she should *smell* us out, she must have some bail: and therefore I'll go and fill a bond, and make a couple of our people put on their *bailing clothes*, and come and sign with her, though I do not think she has money left to pay for the bond, or make the fellows drink: but she has done pretty well already, that is the truth."

Saying this, he went out, and in a little time returned with my late mistress, and two of the fellows, the shabbiness of whose appearance had made his worship order them out of the lord's sight just before, now dressed out like reputable house keepers, who gravely signed with my mistress, without ever asking what; and upon her returning a negative shrug, to a wink from the clerk, went out, without a word.

The business was now over, and my late mistress dismissed to follow her occupation, and make up, by double diligence, for the misfortunes of that morning, only with an assurance to the clerk, that she would remember his kindness, and be punctual for the future.

I was now entered into a service, where I had an opportunity of seeing into the whole mystery of justice: but you must not expect that I should reveal all the secrets of so venerable a trade: though I may give a few general hints for your information, in so abstruse and intricate a science.

The affair of my late mistress was the last of that morning; my worshipful master putting me into his purse, and going directly to dinner, which had waited for him some time. But, through his fare was good, his care for the public would not permit him to make long meals, or debauch away his time. After a short refreshment of only two hours, he returned to his office, where he reassumed his labours, in all the various branches of his extensive employment.—The first thing he looked into was the informations, which the affair of my mis-

tress had interrupted in the morning, as I told you before: when calling his people, one after another, before him, he went through them regularly, in this manner: "John Gibbet, you here inform me that you have found out the person who took the gentleman's hat, in the quarrel in Chelsea fields, last Sunday evening, which you think to make a robbery of: let me hear the circumstances of that affair, for you are so keen a bloodhound, when you get upon any scent, that you are for making every thing robbery be the case what it will."

"Please your worship (replied Gibbet, turning the quid in his cheek, and squirting out the juice) I do all things for the best, and that you know; and that I have brought many things to bear, which no body else would undertake, as witness that affair on Shuter's hill, that got you so much credit, and money too."—"Why, that's true, *John;* but then *you* should remember also the cursed scrape you brought me into about the young fellow who wrote the threatening letters to the farmer, about burning his barns; you undertook to prove that too: but you know how you left me in the lurch, after I had gone such lengths, as had like to have ruined me. Plain swearing will not always do, though never so home; you should remember that: you should attend to circumstances also: but, as to this affair, let me hear what you can make of it."

"Your worship must know, that I, and two or three more of our people, having nothing to do, shammed a quarrel in which a gentleman, who was coming by, lost his hat. It was a large hat, with a very broad gold lace, such as your foreigners wear; it was I that shoved off the hat, and seeing a shabby idle-looking young fellow standing by, without one, I took it up, and asking him if it was his, reached it to him, and saw him make off with it directly. Now if this is not a plain robbery, I do not know what is! a fellow runs away with a gentleman's hat, who advertises it, with a reward for taking the thief, whom he will prosecute! now I have found out the fellow's haunts, for indeed I dogged him, and will have *himself* whenever you please, and can clench the prosecution, by swearing that I saw him carry off the hat. and you know I need say no more, nor take any notice who gave it to him."

"Why, *John*, there may be something in this affair; I like it very well, *John!* and so, clerk, you may enter him on the list for next sessions. This affair has a good look; nor is there any thing unjust in it; for though you gave him the hat, as he knew it was not his own, and yet carried it off, he is guilty of the theft, and that is the same as robbery, in justice, though it may not in law; and justice is the thing to go by, with a safe conscience. And so you may go, *John*, I will let you know when it is proper to have him taken up, only have an eye to him; for fear any one else should snap him out of our hands. —Who comes next! *Richard Sly*, you say you have found out the knot of young fellows that have begun to infest the streets for some nights past."—"Aye please your worship (says *Sly*, shrugging up his shoulders, and grinning) I have found them out to be sure; and well I might! for it was I first set them on the lay."—"How, *Richard!* take care of what you say."—"Oh, your worship, never fear Dick Sly for a slippery trick! I know what I say very well: I have known for some time that these youths have been playing a small game, cribbing from the till, and building sconces, and such-like tricks, that there was no taking hold of; I therefore thought it would be right to bring them to justice, at any rate, and so laid the plan of this gang, and entered them into the business myself, and now, whenever you have a mind to nub them, you need only take me up, and I can peach them all, which will be no bad affair, there are so many of them."—"Why that is true, *Richard;* but they have done nothing yet that deserves so severe a remedy as the gallows! therefore let them alone; perhaps they may mend: or, if they do not, it will be time enough to take them up when they deserve it more than now. To be sure, your peaching them, who first drew them in, is not so very just; but then the law will support you in it, and, while a man has the law on his side, he may laugh at the gallows. And so, *Richard*, have a good look out till these youths are ripe for *Tyburn*, and then your harvest will come!"

It would be endless to go through this whole busin[illegible] *particularly*. Be it sufficient to say, that there wa[illegible] *peach of* the laws, which some of his people did no[illegible] an information of, and almost all, as accom[illegible]

while his whole care was to consider which could turn most to his advantage, in the conviction, and to settle the evidence against them, so as it might be sure not to miscarry.

CHAP. IX.

An highwayman, improperly taken, saves his life by losing his reason. Judicial sagacity and eloquence, triumphant over common sense, and matter of fact. This mystery explained.

WHILE he was in the midst of this business, he was surprised with the news of an highwayman, that moment brought in by a gentleman who had taken him, in the very attempt of robbing him on Turnham-Green. This threw the whole house into an uproar —" An highwayman taken, and by the very party! (exclaimed the justice in an agony of rage and vexation) This is most unfortunate; there is 40*l.* dead loss, beside the shame of it: how shall I support my consequence, if other people can serve the public without my assistance?"

" I wonder who it can be, (said the clerk) I suppose the man on the white mare, or the mask, from Putney-Common! but, whoever it is, something must be done! He must be saved this time to save our credit, and we may have him the next, ourselves! Here they come: do you keep the gentleman in discourse while I speak to the prisoner, and see how he can come down. I shall readily give you your cue"

Just then entered the gentleman with his prisoner, whom they directly knew to be an old offender, who had long baffled their pursuit: a circumstance, that heightened the vexation of his being taken by another, and was not a little favourable to him at this time.

His worship received the gentleman most politely, *and desired* him to sit down a moment, till he should finish a letter he was writing to the secretary of state,

and then he would attend to his business, ordering the prisoner to be removed into another room for the mean time.

He then sat himself down to write, with great deliberation, and had just finished, when his clerk came to deliver him a letter from the lord mayor, which he read over attentively, and, saying it was very well, he then turned to the gentleman, and, asking his pardon for making him wait so long, ordered the prisoner to be brought in.

The highwayman appeared now a quite different person from what he did, when he was in the room a few minutes before; his looks, which were then clouded with the gloom of listless dejection and despair, being inflamed into the fiercest agitations of phrenzy.

The gentleman showed his surprise at this change, as did his worship his uneasiness for his own safety, from the fury of so outrageous a madman. As soon as he was secured, the justice addressing himself, with the height of judicial solemnity, to the prosecutor, "Pray, sir, (said he) will you please to inform me what you have to allege against this unhappy person?" "Sir, (replied the gentleman) all I have to say, is, that he stopped me this afternoon, upon Turnham-Green, and presenting a pistol at me, bid me deliver my money, but being well armed, and having more about me than I chose to lose, instead of my purse, I drew a pistol too, and, his missing fire, I grappled with, and took him on the spot, and from thence brought him directly here: that is all I have to say, sir!"

"And pray, sir, what did he say when you had taken him?" "Not a word, sir, nor has he spoke a syllable since; nor answered any one question he has been asked." "Aye, 'tis so, poor gentleman, it is so! And pray, sir, did he make much resistance when you took him?" "The utmost he was able; but being better mounted, and much stronger than him, I soon overpowered him, though not without great danger, for, after I had him down, he drew this knife, and very narrowly missed plunging it into my body! You see what a cut he made in my coat and waistcoat!"—"Aye, poor man, madness always desperate: I fear, sir, you have been too hasty this affair." "How, sir, too hasty, to take a ma

action of highway robbery? I do not under-
n, sir?"

mean that this person is no robber, but an up-
entleman of family and fortune, who has been
time out of his mind: I have been applied to by
ons more than once, to try to have him appre-
that he might be confined; and, now he is se-
ey will take proper care of him, that he shall
ten any body for the future; for I am satisfied,
was all he meant; and that he would not have
ar money, had you offered it to him; I suppose
shed him, when you had overpowered him, poor
you justly termed it! Pray, sir, did you find
upon him, to make you think he was an high-
? Any watches! jewels! or different purses
? or more money than you might think it pro-
person of his appearance might commonly carry
m?"

eally, sir, I did not find any thing like what you
! this purse, which seems to have about thirty
guineas in it, (for I have not reckoned them) was
thing in all his pockets, except the knife which
on me; his pistols were openly in his saddle, as
en commonly wear them."

well, and does his present behaviour and whole
in this affair convince you, that the unhappy
ld have a felonious intent, in his mad attack
? for men, mad as he is, have no intention at
without a felonious intent, there can be no rob-
ut, I presume, you may understand something
w yourself, sir?"

indeed, sir, I cannot say I know any more law,
t not to wrong any person, nor let them wrong
can help it, as far as common sense will direct
hank God, I have spent my days quietly in the
and never had a dispute with any man in my

mon sense, dear sir! common sense is a blind
matters of law! law and common sense are
ferent things; but as I was saying, sir, where
no felonious intent, there can be no felony; now
is punished only because it is felony, for so th
at must be laid; Felonice, sir, Felonice, or
o! The indictment will be quashed without

word; and who can charge a man with a felon
tent, who is disordered in mind, and can have n
tion at all? 'Tis true, the appearance was b
sufficiently terrifying, to authorize your appre
him; but, as you suffered neither loss nor hur
not suppose, that a gentleman of your humane
ance would desire to add, to the misery of his
unhappy condition, that of imprisonment till t
sessions, when he must be acquitted of course,
would certainly make his madness for ever incur
Whatever expense you have been at in bring
here, I will take upon me to reimburse you on
money in his purse, beside what gratification yo
to require, for your own time and trouble! T
is what I would recommend to you, as a Christia
gentleman, as you appear to be: but, if you
another opinion, you must only swear to your i
tion, and enter into a recognizance of prosecutio
I sign his *Mittimus*, and send word to his frien
are people of condition."

"Indeed, sir, you judge very rightly of me;
not aggravate the distress of any human being!
know the unhappy man, and that he is under so
an affliction, as the loss of reason, I have nothing
to say, than that I am sorry for his misfortune, an
not for the world be the cause of heightening it,
no motive for apprehending him, but the duty
and every member owe the public. I thank hea
my own escape from him, and do not desire to m
advantage of it. As to the people who assiste
bringing him hither, they are still unpaid, and yo
best how to deal with them; so I leave the whol
to you, and am your humble servant."

I have not interrupted this account with any n
the behaviour of the criminal, as it consisted
the most outrageous imitation of madness, with
cations and blasphemies too horrid for repetition

As soon as the gentleman was gone, and th
cleared of all, but the justice, his clerk, and th
man, who was left bound to keep up the farce,
ship thus addressed him: "So, Sir, you thought
for ever; but you see what your feats have c
suppose you are suprised at the pains I hav

bring you through this affair!"—"Not at all, Sir, (replied the criminal) the bank-note for 200*l.* which I had concealed in the sleeve of my coat, and gave your clerk."——"How, Sir, (said the justice in a rage) do you pretend to say it was upon any such account? But you judge of others by yourself. However, I shall not stand to argue the matter with you now; you have escaped for this time, and may be glad of it! but take care for the future! your luck may not always be so good."——"Will your worship please to order your people to return me my horse and arms? and I hope you will give me my purse; for life without something to support it is no great obligation."—"What, Sir! do you pretend to capitulate? Your horse you shall have, not that you have any right to expect him, but because it would not be proper to keep him, after the representation that imposed upon the fool who took you; and here are half a score guineas to carry you to some place where you are not known, and to maintain you till you can get into some honest way of earning your bread. The rest is little enough to give the people instead of your horse, and to stop their mouths. You may stay here till the crowd is dispersed, when you may go where you please."—As there was no remedy, the criminal was forced to submit; nor indeed did he seem much dissatisfied at the heaviness of his composition.

CHAP. X.

An instance of his worship's exemplary justice on lifter. The unfashionable compassion and ge of a sailor. A dispute about superiority of ween his worship and his clerk opens new mys the profession.

IT was now pretty late, and my master was ju ing to supper, pleased with having made so good when he was stopped by more business. A wom kept a chandler's shop in the next street, had before him one of her poor neighbours, whom caught in the very fact of stealing a pound of ch her counter, as she was reaching a two-penny l the shelf: a crime that was heightened by ingratit as she was giving her the loaf on trust; the thief owned to her, that she had not a farthing in the pay for it, nor a morsel to give her three small c who had been fasting the whole day.

Enraged at the heinousness of the crime, and kept from supper while the chickens and asparag cooling on the table, his worship, knitting his bro putting on all the magistrate, asked the trembling with a voice that pierced her soul,—" What sh say for herself, and whether she was guilty of th laid to her charge, or not."—

The poor creature, almost dead with wretc want, and fear, threw herself at his feet, and pou a flood of tears, that for some moments choked terance, " O mercy! mercy! (said she) for the the sweet Jesus, have mercy on a poor wretc want alone compelled to this first offence, to lives of three poor infants, who are this mom ing with hunger. Oh! send, and prove the tr

I say; send and learn their misery, and it will move you to relieve them, and then I care not what becomes of me." "Very fine, truly! if we admit such excuses for shop-lifting, there will be enough ready to plead them. Here, make her *mittimus;* she confesses the fact; as for her brats, bastards too, I suppose, let them be sent to the work-house." "Oh, the poor creatures! they are not bastards; and they have no parish to be sent to. My husband is a sailor, who was pressed on board a man of war six years ago, and has been in the West-Indies ever since, till this summer, when the ship was ordered home to be laid up. Poor soul! he thought he should be paid off, and so wrote me word to Cork, to come to him, for he meant to go and settle in Scotland, his own country; but the moment he came to Portsmouth, he was *turned over* into another ship, without getting a shilling of his six years wages or prize-money, and sent away directly to America; so that, after spending every penny I had in the world, to come to him from Ireland, as he desired, I am left here with my poor children, to starve in a strange place, where nobody has any compassion for me, though my husband wrote me word, that he had above 300*l.* due to him for wages and prize-money; here is his letter! I never go without it! it is all the comfort I have in my distress."

"Aye, I thought so! I thought you were one of those Irish thieves that come to rob us, and cut our throats; but I shall take care of you! I shall make you wish you had continued eating potatoes at home. I wish I could provide as well for every one of your country! we shall never be well, till we have hanged you all." "Oh good your worship! I am no thief; I never stole any thing before. And this woman who has brought me before you, knows the truth of every thing I have told your worship; and that I have always paid her honestly while I had a penny in the world, for I have dealt with her ever since I *came to London*; but hunger and the cries of three *starving children*, forced me to this! O my children, *my children!*" "Peace, woman! all you can say signi*fies nothing*; you were taken in the fact, and to Ne*gate you shall go directly*. And, as for your brats, *better for them to die of hunger now*, than to live *hanged like their mother*."

By this time the *mittimus* was ready, which he signed without the least hesitation or pity, and then hurried away to his supper, having almost fretted his bowels out to think it was spoiled by waiting so long.

But, though the justice's compassion could not be moved by such a poor wretch, his clerk was not so inexorable, but yielded to the persuasion of an honest tar, who, seeing a crowd at the door, had given sixpence to go in, and see the fun; and for two guineas, which barely paid the fees, ventured to make up the affair, and let her go about her business, though he did not know what might be the consequence, if it should come to his worship's knowledge.—Jack took no notice of what he said, but taking the poor creature, who was just sinking under the agitations of fear, joy, and gratitude, by the hand, "Cheer away, sister, (said he) cheer away; we'll bring up all this lee-way, next trip. Damn my eyes and limbs, if I'll see a brother seaman's family at short allowance, while I have a shilling! come, heave ahead; I'll rig and victual you and your children, against your husband comes, to man you for a voyage home. I'll swing my hammock in the next birth, and you shall cook the kettle, while I stay ashore."—Saying which words, he led her off in triumph.—This the clerk told his worship, when he came in to supper, after giving him one of the guineas, as his share of the composition.

I now thought the business of the day over, and was preparing to take a view of my new master's heart, while he and his clerk were enjoying their success over a hearty bottle. But I was prevented by an accident, which disturbed for a while, and had like to have entirely broken off this harmony between them: a dispute, like those between all conquerors, arising about the division of the spoil, and the merit in the acquisition of it.

"This will do, (said his worship, clapping his arms *a kimbo, after* a full glass) this will do! what between *the bawd in* the morning and the highwayman in the *afternoon*, we have made a noble day of it! But wh[illegible] *have you* ordered about that fellow? I hope you h[illegible] *taken* care that we may have him ourselves ne[illegible] *Never fear*, (replied the clerk) I have done for

I have sent people to *lay* all the roads he can go, from the inn where he ordered his horse; and plausible Tom is fixed there, to scrape an acquaintance with him, so that he cannot escape."

"Ah, let Tom alone to manage him; many a cunning fellow's heart has that Tom crept into, till he has wheedled him to Tyburn! Not a lawyer of them all has a smoother tongue. But did not I improve the hint of the madness well? how quietly the gudgeon swallowed it! If I were to set about it, I believe in my soul, I could have persuaded him out of his own senses, and made him think himself mad, as well as the highwayman! ha! ha! ha! Though you were not quite clear enough in your note; you should have told me all the particulars; I was often at a loss; but, upon the whole, I think I did pretty well; pretty well, I think!"

"Why aye, you did so manage it pretty well, when I had given you the cue, and so might any one have done. But how would you have contrived to bring him off, if I had not made that hit!"—"How!—why easily enough!—I would have——But what have you done with the bank-note? let me see that!"—"The note! it is safe enough. But you do not tell me, how you would have managed to have earned it; I think you should do that before you ask for it."—"How I would have earned it? why, pray, good Sir, do you know whom you talk to in this manner?"—"Whom I talk to!—I talk to the worshipful justice——, whose betters I have talked to before now; and who would not have asked me that question some years ago, when he applied to me to instruct him in the business of his office!"—"Insolence! instruct me! I'll make you know, Sir, that I understand my business, without your instruction! I'll take another clerk to-morrow."—"With all my heart, good master justice! with all my heart; and see who will be the loser by that. If you do not know it yet, you will soon see then, whether the business comes to the justice or his clerk; for I give you notice, that I shall take all the people with me; you shall have the credit of making up a new set for yourself, I assure you."—"Very fine! very fine treatment this!"—"Why do you deserve it then, Sir, if you do not like it? I say, very fine treatment too! that you should take upon you

undervalue my skill, and assume the credit of it to yourself; you, whom I first taught, and still support in your office, in despite of all your blunders!—As for the bank-note, here it is, and here it shall be, till you have settled the account of the last sessions, when you were so clever upon me, sending me on a fool's errand, out of the way, while you took up the reward. Perhaps you thought I did not see through your design, or that I was afraid to speak of it; but you were quite mistaken; I only waited till the remedy should come into my own hands, and, now it has, be assured I shall make use of it, whatever you may think, Sir! and further let me tell you, that if you say much more, I will think of parting in earnest, if you do not think proper to come to a new agreement: for I see no reason why you should carry off two-thirds of the profit, only because you are justice indeed, though I do all the business!"

CHAP. XI.

The breach happily made up by the arrival of company. The evening concluded in character. His worship goes next morning to hear a charity-sermon, and from thence to eat a charity-feast, where CHRYSAL *enters into a new service. Some account of the nature of a charity-feast.*

MATTERS were now at such a height, that I every minute expected they would have proceeded from words to blows, when a pull at the bell brought them both to themselves in an instant.

"*Hah!* that is true! this is quarter night, (said the *justice*) and here the ladies are come! Give me your *hand*: why should we fall out about our skill, while *the business* goes on well? here's my service to you; *and let* there be no more of it."—

"*With* all my heart, (replied the clerk) but why will you urge me on thus, when you know that I cannot bear to have my skill called in question?"—

By this time the ladies entered, whom I directly saw to be the *commode* matrons, and compliant fair of his district, who came duly to compound with him, for the breach of those laws he was appointed to support.

The very mention of this scene sufficiently explains the nature of it, and makes a more particular description unnecessary. All parties behaved properly on the occasion. They paid their subsidies, for which he returned them very wholesome advice, to behave with diligence and discretion in their professions; and especially those who lived in his neighbourhood, he cautioned to avoid all riots, and causes of offence, which might bring his connivance and protection into suspicion; then, relaxing from the severity of his morals, he gave up the rest of the night, and a good part of the next morning, to mirth and good-fellowship, in the company of a few of his particular favourites, and best customers of this motley set, having dismissed the rest to the pursuit of their occupations.

The business of the day, and pleasures of the night had so far exhausted his spirits, that nature required a long pause: accordingly, no business coming in to disturb him, (for such was his vigilance in his office, and care for the public, that every thing gave way to that) he made a late morning, not waking till he was called to attend a sermon and dinner, which were to be that day for the benefit of a charity, to which he was a constant benefactor; as indeed his public spirit made him, to all that were already established, and prompted him to strike out many new: in which, as the author of them, he hoped to have the management, while novelty should make it the fashion to support them.

But in this he was always disappointed. For though, in the multitude of his schemes, he sometimes stumbled upon a good one, yet his head was so confused, and his notions so wild and immethodical, that before he could digest his plans into any regularity, some one else took up the hint, and ran away with the credit of the design.

At church he edified greatly, by a comfortable nap *during the* sermon, which finished his refreshment, and *sent him* with a clear head, and keen stomach, to the *feast, where* every person seemed to vie, in demonstr

ing his attachment to the cause of their meeting, by the quantity he ate and drank.

I here changed my service once more, being given by his worship in his subscription, and so came into the possession of a community in general, which gave me an opportunity of seeing the human heart in a more complicated view, than perhaps any other scene of its actions could afford; as there was hardly a profession, degree, or rank of life, which had not a representative in this meeting, nor a motive of action, however apparently contrary to its design, or contradictory to each other, which did not contribute its influence to the bringing them together.

While I lay in the hands of the treasurer of the charity, unassigned to any particular use, or person, I enjoyed a state of liberty something like that of living in a commonwealth, having it in my power to enter into the hearts of all the governors (who were now my owners) as I liked, and to make many observations without restraint to any particular person, time, or place.

Charity is the most amiable and most exalted of the human virtues, and that which rises to the nearest imitation of the divine. Nor can any thing be a stronger proof of the beneficence of the author of human nature, than his placing this virtue, which is the perfection of it, within the reach of every individual.

For charity is a disposition to think well of, and do well to, every other human being, without partiality, prejudice, or respect, to any other motive, than this universal duty; giving of alms being no more than one, and that perhaps the very meanest effect of it.

But this extensiveness of the nature of charity is the reason of its being generally misconceived, and most erroneously confined to this effect, by minds unable to comprehend its greater excellence; and, from this mistake, *have proceeded* many of the extraordinary instances of *this effect of* charity, which distinguishes the present *age.*

This is a most dangerous error: it is too like thinki[illegible] *to bribe* Heaven with the wages of Hell; and yet [illegible] *anely* absurd as such a notion is, daily observ[illegible] *hows* the extensive prevalence of it.

As charity is such a refined and exalted virtue, and purely spiritual, it must appear strange to you, how it should enter into the head of man to make so gross, low, and sensual a passion, as eating, the foundation of it! Indeed so unnatural is the thought to pure speculation, unacquainted with the perversions of life, that a charity-feast, in the literal meaning of the phrase, must be taken for a meeting of the poor to eat the provisions supplied for them by the rich, instead of the rich meeting to gorge their own appetites.

But a little observation of the present bias of the world will solve this difficulty. Of all the natural appetites and passions, which possess that part of mankind, whose age has enabled them to amass money enough to give away, eating is the most universal. I say natural passions, for fraud, avarice, or ambition, or even lust, at that time of life, are not the passions of nature.

To gratify this, therefore, was the most probable scheme for drawing them together: and, when that is sufficiently done, the full heart opens easily, and shares its abundance with the empty.

CHAP. XII.

A representation of the company. The history of one of the principal members. The modern method of bribing Heaven with the wages of Hell.

*THEY had feasted, nor did their minds yet require such another banquet, when I became a member of their society; you must not expect a particular account or description of such a scene. A few general hints must satisfy your curiosity, as I have told you on other occasions.

Let your imagination represent you a number of people, whose highest pleasure is eating, seated at a large table, covered with all the delicacies, all the rarities of the season, in a plenty that promised satiety to their keenest appetites. But I must stop! I see the very thought has an effect upon you, that savours to

* Homer.

strongly of sensuality, and might, if not checked, put a stop to our conversation, by some human hankerings. Let us therefore pass over such a scene, and turn our observation to the company, as they sat, after the fragments of the feast were removed. And here it will be proper to have recourse to the expedient we made use of before, and, holding up the mirror to imagination, view the whole scene as if actually present.

Observe, then, that enormous bulk of flesh, that sits at the head of the table, with his waistcoat all unbuttoned, and gasping for breath; the distension of his stomach having left his lungs scarce room to perform the animal functions, and fat almost choked the passages of vital air.

He is one of the principal supporters of this, and every other public charity founded on the modern method of a feast; the natural avarice of his heart outwitting itself in this instance; for as he is sure of satiating his appetites with more and better victuals and wine, at these meetings, than he could have at home, for much more than the price of the ticket, the advantage in that bargain always tempts him to go; and then the happiness of his heart, in the fulness of his stomach, opens his purse, and he subscribes with a liberality that arises almost to profusion.

But look into his heart, and read the rest of his life: the very money which he bestows with such an appearance of virtue, on this best of uses (for no error in motive or manner, must take off the merit of an action that does good) this very money (I say) has perhaps been acquired by vices the most opposite to the virtues it is applied to.

The greatest frugality, application, and skill in the mysterious business of a scrivener, have raised this person, from the most abject poverty, to affluence, above the moderation of a rational wish. But so powerful is the force of habit, that, though the cause has been long since removed, the effect still remains, and he persists to save and heap up money, by all the mean and iniquitous ways which want first suggested to him. One instance, and that not singular, in him, will give you a sufficient insight into his character.

A gentleman, whom indiscretion and indolence of temper had involved in some pecuniary distresses, had the greater misfortune, some years ago, to be recommended

to this person to borrow such a sum of money as should extricate him from his immediate difficulties, on a mortgage of his estate.

As his security was good, his business was soon done; but the convenience of his estate to another which this person had lately purchased in his neighbourhood, and an acquaintance with the unwary easiness of his disposition, made him cast a wishful eye upon it, and form schemes for getting it absolutely into his possession.

At first he strove to tempt his indiscretion by the offer of more money to supply his pleasures; but finding that would not take, and that the sense of his former extravagances dwelt so strongly on him, as to give mind a kind of turn to industry, did he know how to ply it, his ready genius struck out a method, that imagined could not fail of success.

He therefore cultivated an intimacy with the gentleman, in which, upon all occasions, he affected to boast of his own success in life, and to attribute it to his having always a command of money, to take the advantage of any bargain that might offer.

As this turn of conversation seemed to flow only from the fulness of his heart, and to be free from all design, it had the effect he proposed, and raised a desire in his friend, to follow a method which had been so successful with him. He therefore, one day, communicated to him a resolution, which he had formed, of selling his estate, and applying the money to business; and desired his friend's assistance to execute his design. After an appearance of surprise, the scrivener testified his pleasure and approbation of his prudence, by the readiness with which he undertook to serve him.

The ease with which the first part of his scheme had succeeded, made him form further hopes, and think of getting the estate he desired, even at a cheaper rate than purchasing it.

After some time spent, as he said, in fruitless inquiries, for a purchaser, he most artfully drew his friend, to desire that he would buy it himself: at first he seemed to hesitate, but then, as it were yielding to the impulse of his friendship, he concluded a bargain for it, on terms evidently advantageous to the seller.

All things being agreed upon, the parties met to conclude the affair, when the writings being read over, and the money lying on the table, while the scrivener told it, the gentleman executed the deeds of conveyance, and receipt, before proper witnesses, who withdrew as soon as they had signed them.

In the mean time the scrivener continued to tell the money, till a servant entered hastily with a letter [illegible] from a lord, who was one of his best clients, and desired to see him that moment. The difficulty this threw him into was soon solved, by his friend's compliance to defer his business for a few hours, as the lord's urgency would not admit the least delay. Accordingly, he put up both the deeds and money in all the apparent confusion of hurry, and went away to his lordship.

Next morning the gentleman called to receive the price of his estate, but his friend was not at home, nor to be spoken with in the afternoon, for his turn was [illegible]ed, and he neither desired, nor perhaps thought it [illegible] to keep up any farther acquaintance with him. [illegible] such things might happen to a man in business, the gentleman took no notice of them, but quietly swallowed the same excuses for some days successively. At length his patience began to be exhausted, and his fears alarmed at a behaviour so strange, and contrary to that height of intimacy that had been between them, even were there no business in the case.——In this perplexity he went one morning, resolved not to quit the house till he should see him; and when a message to that purpose was, after long attendance, complied with, upon a warm expostulation, he received for answer, from his *friend*, that "he had been of late too much engaged in affairs of consequence to attend compliments, and knew not any business he could have with him."

"Not know my business, sir, (replied the gentleman *in astonishment*) I come, sir, for my money, [illegible] shall *hereafter* never trouble you more [illegible] compliment."—"Your money, sir! I do [illegible] you; *pray, sir*; what money do you mean?"—"[illegible] money! *the purchase* money of my estate, sir; [illegible] were *to have* paid me above a week ago, [illegible] *deeds of sale*."—"Poor gentleman; it [illegible]

formed, and always feared. He has lost his reason; and it should not seem much much better to trust myself longer with a man in his condition."—"Take care, sir; this is too tender a point to be trifled with: you almost make me mad?"—"Aye; there it is: he is mad, poor man: and is even sensible of it himself!"—"Death, sir; do not dare to dally with me a moment longer! answer me directly! pay me my money; and do not really provoke me to a madness that may be fatal to us both."—"Sir, your madness, or reason is nothing to me: however, I will answer you directly, that I owe you no money, and none will I pay you. As for the purcha-- money of your estate, your parting with which I see turned your brain, when you come to yourself, you recollect, that I paid it to you, when you executed deeds of sale; or if you do not remember it, your receipt properly witnessed, will prove it for me, a desire no more: and therefore, sir, let me have no ther trouble with you, if you do not choose to take your lodgings in *Moorfields*."

"This is too much; just Heaven! this is too much: too much for human patience to endure! or wait the law's delay for remedy! I will avenge myself, assert the cause of justice, and rid the groaning world of such a monster!" (exclaimed the unhappy gentleman) now really irritated into the extremity of that phrenzy which the other only wanted to impose on him, and drawing his sword, before the wretch could call for help, or take any method of defence, he plunged it through his body.

His shrieks soon alarmed his servants, who, rushing in, found him weltering in his blood, and the madman smiling, in the absence of frantic ecstacy, over him, and incapable of attention to any other circumstance, though some of them dragged him before a magistrate, while the rest were busied in procuring relief for their master.

The madman was committed to prison, to wait the event of the wound he had given, which Heaven, to let the measure of the scrivener's iniquity be full, had directed to a part where it was not mortal.

In a word, he recovered, though not to a sense of justice or humanity, but persisting in his iniquity, which now was sharpened by a spirit of revenge, for what he ha endured, the first effort of his health was to have the

happy sufferer confined in *Bedlam*, where he still languishes under all the horrors that attend a total loss of reason, without relief, or even compassion from the cruel undoer; who this very morning, as he was stepping into his chariot, to come to the *charity-feast*, spurned from him with his foot, and refused the smallest alms to the wretched wife of the ruined madman, who begs in the common streets, and was driven by misery and despair, to throw herself even at his feet to implore relief.

I see your abhorrence rise at such a monster, but that will wonder even heighten it, when I tell you, that this oppressor has neither child, nor kinsman, to inherit his wealth; for he was himself a foundling, and reared at the public expense, without the knowledge or tenderness of a parent to soften his rugged soul, nor would the stubbornness of his heart ever permit him to marry, for fear of the expense of a family; but he is this moment meditating on some ostentatious scheme of charity, to the foundation of which, he designs to dedicate the wealth which he has amassed by such villanies.

CHAP. XIII.

Continued: The history of a general almoner. His method of making charity begin at home. He consults a noted bawd, but disappoints his designs, by too great confidence in his own skill. The character of a clergyman.

MOVE your eye to the left, and view that demure-looking picture of devotion, who sits there in silence, lifting up his eyes to Heaven, and sighing in spirit, at the festivity and sensual conversation round him.

Who, that can see no deeper than outward appearances, would not think that man sincere in his professions of religion and virtue? whereas in truth, he is the most abandoned contemner of both; and deepens the dye of his blackest crimes by the most hardened hypocrisy, secretly living on the practice of those very vices, of which he professes the greatest abhorrence.

all that consequence, which he assumes, in the
n of this charity, on the merit of the largeness of
cription to it, in reality, he is but the dispenser
people's benefactions, into whose good opinion
nsinuates himself, by his pretended piety, that
trust their charity to his disposal, who always
nself for his trouble, by subducting largely, from
s confided to him. For, as real charity vaunteth
lf, they never divulge the secret, completely im-
n by his address, that never lets one half of his
itors know of the other; by which management,
sums he gives are always made public, for ex-
nd imitation each thinks that he adds most liberal-
is own donation.——But this is not the only
by which he turns his piety to advantage.
ess which the reputation of it gains him into
very family, opens him an opportunity of car-
the deepest intrigues, and becoming a pander,
both natural and unnatural, which the inter-
the parties concerned makes them still keep

the former, the mystery of that trade has been
xplained already; and the latter is too horrible for
tion. I shall therefore pass over those scenes,
clude my account of this extraordinary person-
h one instance of his address, in finding out and
g the weak side of superstition and vice.
course of his love-negotiations, he had made an
tance with a woman who kept a public bagnio,
of prostitution, which acquaintance, mutual in-
emented into an intimacy. In this most infa-
rade had this woman amassed considerable
the disposal of which (after her death) took
h of her thoughts, in those moments, when the
ences of her debauched life forced her to think
.
e secrets of their trade had removed every re-
om between them, she often used to consult him
head; when he always comforted her with dis-
s upon religion and virtue, stripping them of th
mbrances of priestcraft, and bringing them be
genuine principles of benevolence and cha

Frequent inculcation of this doctrine had the effect he designed; the matron was pleased with the thought of having all the benefit of religion, without the trouble of the practice, and immediately began to exercise her donations to public charities, which, as it was not quite so much in character for her to offer in person, while she continued her profession, and she saw no necessity, nor felt inclination to quit that, she always confided to the distribution of her spiritual guide.

Nor did his success stop here; he improved his influence on her superstition, so far that he prevailed on her to compound with heaven for the vices of her life, by bequeathing the earnings of them to its use, after her death.

For this purpose he himself drew her will, which pious application of her fortune set her conscience at ease; and she continued her usual business to the hour of her death, which happened three years after, with such care and industry, that some instance of negligence, in one of her servants administering to the pleasure of her guests, gave her such uneasiness in her last moments, that, with her dying breath, she lamented the ruin her house must come to, after she should quit the care of it, for the joys of Heaven.

You must not think that his design extended no farther, than to prevail on her to make such a will: he had drawn it himself, as I have told you, and took care to word it in such a manner, as he thought should give him, under the appearance of her executor and trustee, as she designed him, a real property in her wealth; as it was immediately to come into his hands, on her death, and there was no time appointed for the fulfilling his pious intentions.

But here his sagacity disappointed itself; for neglecting to take proper advice, or afraid of making any person privy to his designs, he had committed such material errors in the form of the will, as gave room to learned council to set it aside, in favour of the heir at law, her nephew, who, from cleaning shoes under a gateway, was enriched with at least a third part of his aunt's fortune, which remained to him, after the costs of the suit, that had been carried on for him, in forma pauperis, while her executor had the vexation of disappointment aggravated by a decree to pay all the costs.—This was a se

stroke: but it did not break his spirit, though it obliged him to return to his former occupation of an almoner, which you see he pursues with that attention, which always ensures success.

I see you sink under the pain of finding the best actions debased, by springing from such motives: but be careful to avoid an error, fatally too prevalent, of concluding from the abuse, against the use of any thing that may, in its end, be conducive to good.

These instances I have given: and I could add many more; not to depreciate the custom of giving to public charities, which is the noblest use of wealth: but to caution you against the dangerous error of thinking, that such giving alone, without reformation of life, and the active practice of the other virtues, can be acceptable in the sight of him to whom it is offered, or efficacious to procure his favour; and to show the absurd impiety of persisting in vice, with a vain hope of bribing Heaven with the wages of Hell.

But, to relieve your pain, behold that venerable person who sits opposite to him; the serenity of whose looks shows the happiness of his mind. Read his heart, and you will not find one discontent or sorrow there, but what humanity imprints for the distresses of his fellow-creatures, which his beneficence, his real charity, is for ever finding methods to relieve, not only by pecuniary benefactions, though to these is devoted the far greater part of his ample fortune, but also by his advice, instruction, and good offices, the judicious application and sincerity of which makes them very rarely fail of success. —He is a real supporter of charity, in its most extensive sense! his example giving a sanction, a seal of virtue, to every thing he appears in, which puts wicked wit out of countenance, and stops the tongue of calumny; and is (even were it alone) sufficient to counterbalance all the instances, which could be brought against it. His long life, which has been extended by Heaven, as a blessing to mankind, has been a constant illustration of the religion he teaches; not one instance of his actions ever contradicting his profession, as near as human weakness can act up to divine perfection.

Such is this clergymen! such should all clergymen' preserve the purity, the dignity of a function, w

pare the human for a participation of the divine nature, to accomplish which greatest end, all profession, not enforced by practice, must be ineffectual.

To mention any one instance of his good works would be doing injustice to the rest, and contradicting the desire of his heart, which, next to doing good is to conceal what he does, his actions being so far from ostentation, that to Heaven only, and the parties themselves, are they revealed; nor to these even is the hand that reaches them the blessing always known.

CHAP. XIV.

Continued: The history of a bear-leader. His method of making his pupil's masters earn their money. The general consequence of close friendships between the different sexes. He modestly offers his pupil's mother a nut almost too hard for her liquorish tooth; but she swallows it whole, to save the trouble of mumbling, and meets a just return for her untimely passion.

OPPOSITE to him, you see a man, whose rich dress and supercilious carriage give him the appearance of a superiority over all the rest of the company: but such artifices impose only upon the ignorant and vulgar; to a judicious eye they aggravate the defects they are meant to disguise; and the low-bred avaricious wretch appears doubly contemptible, through the unnatural veil of pride and munificence.

There is something so whimsically singular in the story of this person, that I will gratify your curiosity with a short sketch of it.

He was born in the lowest class of the people, in a poor village, in one of the most remote parts of the kingdom; but, the delicacy of his constitution making him unfit for a life of labour, the common lot of his condition, his poor parents denied themselves almost the necessaries of life to send him to school, to qualify him

for some employment better suited to his natural imbecility. The master of the school, who was a person of discernment and good nature, soon perceived that the weakness of his body was amply made up by the abilities of his mind, and took a pleasure in giving instruction which he saw received with advantage. Nor did he stop here; but, when his pupil had made the ordinary progress of the school, he used the persuasive argument of teaching him for nothing, and even supplying him with books at his own expense, to prevail upon his parents to let him pursue his studies.

When he had advanced by this assistance considerably beyond the usual boundaries of school-education, being not only critically skilled in the learned languages, but also well grounded in the principles of the liberal sciences, his kind master crowned the benefit he had conferred upon him, by recommending him warmly to a widow lady, of large fortune, to educate her only son, whom female fondness would not permit her to trust out of her sight at a public school.

In this employment he behaved himself with such circumspection and care, (for the weakness of his constitution saved him from all danger of excess, and the horrors of returning to his former poverty and distress fixed his attention, invariably, to every possible means of advancing his fortune) that he won the confidence of his pupil's mother so far, that she ventured to send her darling son to the university in his care; and when he had finished his studies there, with credit, gave him a genteel stipend, to accompany him in his travels to the different courts of Europe, to complete an education so happily begun, and enable him to make a figure in life, suitable to the affluence of his fortune.

The unbounded confidence with which this trust was committed to him, gave him sufficient opportunities of gratifying the ruling passions of his heart, vanity and avarice, as it enabled him to secrete, to his own use, as much as he pleased, of his pupil's fortune, satisfied that his accounts would never be examined, and to acquire, late as it was, the ornamental parts of education, which his original poverty and the necessary gravity of his literary life and employment had precluded him from

Accordingly, as soon as he arrived in Paris, the first place where he designed to make any delay, he suffered himself to be prevailed upon by his pupil to remit something of the strictness of his authority, and, seemingly, winked at his plunging into all the levities and excesses of unguarded youth, that he might have the more convenient opportunity for executing his own schemes. Thus, while his abused charge threw away the time he ought to have spent in receiving profitable information and improvement, in idle expense and vicious pleasures, the prudent tutor took the advantage of his absence, to attend the masters he retained for him, and learn dancing, fencing, music, and all the other accomplishments of polite education; a conduct which he carefully observed, in all the different stages of their travels. But still his labour, as you see, was, for the most part, in vain, the rust of his mean original being too strongly confirmed to be worn off by so late application, so that his awkward affectation only makes defects, which would otherwise have passed unnoticed, become more visible, and exposes him to contempt and ridicule.

But, eager as he was in these favourite pursuits, he did not let them divert his attention from the main point, of continuing to cultivate the good opinion and confidence of his pupil's mother, to whom he constantly wrote in such a strain of piety, and gave such pleasing accounts of her son's conduct, expatiating on his good qualities, and palliating his failings, with the tender titles of youthful levity, and the frailty of nature, (for fear she should receive information of his excesses from any other person) that she thought herself happy, in having placed him under a man of such virtue and goodness; her opinion of which was not a little heightened by the care he took of his parents, to whom he constantly remitted, through her hands, such a portion of his stipend as enabled them to live with comfort; and with his former master he kept up a regular correspondence, informing him of every thing he saw in his travels, that he thought would be agreeable and entertaining to him, and expressing his gratitude for the friendship which had advanced him so happily in life.

When his pupil had finished his travels in this m
they returned home, where the fond mother re

ed them with the highest joy, her esteem for the tutor almost equalling her love for her son. But this natural affection did not long maintain the pre-eminence! Her established opinion of the understanding, learning, and virtue of the former, levelled the height from which difference of condition had made her look down upon him before, and she admitted him into all the intimacy of friendship. There is nothing more deceitful, than connexions of this kind between the different sexes. Let them be formed with whatever resolutions they will, at first, nature will insensibly take the alarm, and force the execution of her most powerful laws.

This intimacy had not been long cultivated, before the lady began to see perfections in her new friend, which she had never perceived before, and to feel a pleasure in his conversation which her heart had long been a stranger to. She knew not how it was, but nothing pleased her except what he said, or did: Even her fondness for her son began to cool, and her eyes to open to faults in him, which she had always been blind to before, though he had never taken any pains to conceal them from her. This did not escape the penetration of her friend a moment, nor was his judgment at a loss how to improve it to the best advantage. He immediately began to assume a timid tenderness in his looks and manner, and took every occasion of displaying the genteel accomplishments he had acquired in his travels, while her unhappy son, as if he had entered into the scheme against himself, seldom came near her, and, when he did, behaved with a careless indifference, scarce short of rudeness and insult.

Such a contrast was too striking to pass unnoticed: nor did her friend fail to aggravate the impressions of it by doubling his assiduity and tender complaisance, whenever his former pupil withdrew, and lamenting the unhappy turn he had taken, in terms of the deepest concern, but without ever offering a word in his excuse.

This subtle conduct had the desired effect: The love of the mother was entirely diverted from her son to her friend; and, as the foolish fondness of her deceased husband had left much the greater part of his large fortune in her power, the improvement of this change was an object worthy of his highest attentio

shall, them to bring it to propriety of such an action, made how to mention it.

But here again the evil genius of the son prevailed, and he did that for them which they knew not how to do themselves. For some of his friends, observing the intimacy between his mother and his former tutor, desired him to be upon his guard, and strive to prevent the consequences of it, by a change in his behaviour to her. Such prudent advice, if properly followed, might probably have had effect. But, instead of that, he flew immediately to his mother, and indiscreetly charged her with a design of betraying the confidence of his father and ruining him, to gratify a ridiculous passion for mean, unworthy object; and then turning to him, who happened to be present, he told him fiercely that, if did not that instant quit his mother's house, he would treat him as the villany of such a design deserved, the next place he should ever meet him, and so flu out of the room in the highest rage, leaving them ring at each other, and almost petrified with astonishment.

But a few moments restored them to themselves affair was now revealed, and so the greatest diffi over. "I wish," (said the tutor, as if he spoke former pupil, though he took care to wait till he him out of the house) "I wish no other person h me had reason to fear your resentment; or that no other obstacle but that, to prevent the happin heart languishes for."—And then turning to th as if he did not know that she had heard what said, "I am most unhappy, madam, (proceede find myself the cause of your being treated in ner, and shall immediately withdraw, to preve tition of it; as for me, since I am to lose the of your conversation, it matters not what b me!"—Saying which, he made her a most bow, and, with a look of the highest tend grief, seemed to prepare to leave the room.

"Hold, Sir," (exclaimed the lady, th ment at her son's behaviour

more readily melt at the distress of her lover) "Hold, Sir! what are you going to do? Will you desert me in this danger and distress?"—And then softening her voice and looks into the greatest tenderness, "I thought" (continued she) "I should never want a protector while my friend lived."—"Nor shall you, madam," (answered he, with an appearance of warmth that banished all reserve) "My life shall protect you from every danger and affront. But,—oh, that I had a tie to justify such an attachment to the world, which else will censure it severely."—And then, taking her hand, he bent his knee, and pressed it to his lips.

Such an act of gallantry was not to be resisted, in the condition she was then in! she bent forward to meet him, and, laying her head upon his bosom as he arose, "Let it be justified, (she murmured in a broken, faultering accent) by every sacred tie of love and truth; of honour and religion!" This was all he wanted! He seized her in his arms, and, pressing her to his breast, sealed the contract on her trembling, withered lips.

The impatient love-sick fair now thought every obstacle to her wishes removed, and therefore distantly proposed sending for a priest directly, to tie the sacred knot, and prevent any designs her undutiful son might form to disappoint her happiness. But her prudent lover was in no such haste! He now had her secure, beyond danger of retreating; but, as her person was not the only object of his desires, he wisely judged it best to refrain, a few moments, from the possession of that, to secure the more solid enjoyment of her fortune; as he was not certain, but this fit of fondness might wear off, and her natural affection for her son return, when her untimely passion should be gratified. He, therefore, resolved to improve her present disposition beyond the danger of repentance, and sent for the priest directly; passing the intermediate moments, till his arrival, in the most passionate, endearing dalliance.

But, just as the blushing, bashful bride was going to approach the altar, he stopped short, as if upon a sudden thought, and turning to her, "This, madam, secures our present happiness, (said he) but how are you to be revenged upon your base, ungrateful son? What certainty have I, that a return of your former fondn

for him may not sacrifice me to his implacable resentment? Some settlement should first be made; and then anxiety and fear wont damp the ardour of our joys." "I understand you not! (answered she, in confusion and astonishment) What settlement can you mean? Do I not give you the possession of my fortune with myself?" "True, madam, (replied he) you do! And, could I be sure of having them for ever, I should be satisfied! But death may rob me of you, and then your fortune will descend to your ungracious son, while I am thrown upon the world, destitute of every means of self-defence and support." "And can you doubt my love?" (added she, not a little surprised, and startled at his caution) "I doubt it not! nor would I doubt it! (returned he) and therefore will remove all room for doubt." "What must I settle, then? (said she) How much of my fortune will remove your fears, and satisfy your wishes? Here! take this paper, and write down your terms!" "That is soon done!" (said he, and, taking the paper, directly wrote the word ALL, and reached it to her.) It is not easy to describe her astonishment and indignation, at the assurance and unreasonableness of such a demand. "What! ALL! (said she, with evident emotion) Will not less do? Is nothing to be left to my disposal? This is too hard!" The lover instantly perceived his ticklish situation! However, he was resolved to try the utmost, assured, that, even if her resolution held, he was in no danger of losing her quite. "Madam, (said he, throwing his arms around her, and embracing her tenderly) I give you myself, and all I have; and I expect the like return: I pretend not to compare the value of the gifts; but love is delicate, and will bear no abatement."

If the passions of youth are impetuous, those of old age are silly! The ardour of this address, with shame of being refused upon any account, thus in the very crisis of her hopes, made her comply, and she betrayed the confidence of her husband, and signed away the inheritance of her child, to gratify a preposterous, untimely, ridiculous love.

The return she met with was just! Her new husband, now all his schemes were accomplished, scorned to preserve even the decency of appearance, but threw off the

mask directly, and treated her with such indignity and contempt, that she broke from him, in despair, in the first week of her marriage, and threw herself upon the mercy of her basely ruined son; whose resentment was not proof to such a trial; but, yielding to filial piety, he shared, with her, the poor pittance which he happily had independent of her, till she sunk under the weight of misfortune, shame, and remorse.

Nor did her husband treat his first benefactor or his parents better. With the former he directly dropped all correspondence; and, giving the latter an allowance of twenty pounds a year, just to keep them from starving, he positively forbid their ever letting him hear from them more, on the penalty of forfeiting that, and every other instance of his favour.

Far from being satisfied with the success of his villany, or enjoying the fortune he had so basely obtained, his whole life has been spent, as you see, in anxious attempts to hide the meanness of his original, under the splendour of his appearance; and the iniquity by which he acquired his wealth, by vain ostentation of charity and munificence.

CHAP. XV.

Continued: Some reflections that may appear impertinent to many, and unprofitable to more, but still are neither improper, nor unjust. The history of an honest attorney. More wonders! The way of the world reversed. Right triumphant over might; and gratitude shown in high life.

MOVE your eye towards the lower end of the table, and behold that person whose aspect and appearance command veneration and esteem. He was bred in a profession, the very name of which is become a reproach, from the abuse of unworthy professors. Nor can it be otherwise, while every low-bred person, who is just able to give a son the first rudiments of education, and ambitious of seeing him in the character of a gentleman, is

mitted to breed him an attorney; and as soon as he has served a time, as to the most illiberal mechanic trade, to turn him loose upon the world, to live by the practice of the very crimes and iniquities which his profession was originally instituted to suppress, without any fortune to save him from the necessity of having recourse to such base means; and without being instructed in the principles of probity and virtue, to support him against the temptations of the many frauds and villanies which his business brings him to the knowledge of: Nay, so far from giving any attention to this indispensable duty, of forming the mind by proper instruction, such is the perverseness of man, that if a child betrays an early propensity to chicane and fraud, by setting his play-fellows together by the ears, and cozening them of their toys, he is immediately marked for this profession, and, instead of being corrected for such a disposition, and having it nipped in the bud, is encouraged in it, by hearing it made the omen and ground of his future success in life, till it is confirmed beyond a sense of shame or remorse, and becomes the ruling principle of his life. The conduct, consequent to such education and principles, has brought the profession into so great disrepute, that scarce any person of character or fortune will breed a son to it; by which means the evil is daily aggravated more and more, and threatens to become absolutely irremediable at last. For, at present, so many are the opportunities that tempt to iniquity in the practice, and so universal the reproach affixed to the very name of an attorney, that all regard to reputation, that powerful preservative of virtue, seems to be in vain, and it requires an uncommon rectitude of heart to support the conflict: But that there are some who are equal to this trial, and that the fault is not in the profession, but in the abuse of it, the person before us is an eminent instance.

A nobleman, who died some time since without legitimate issue, thought proper to bequeath, not only his *own great* acquisitions, but also the immense possessions *of his ancestors*, to a spurious son, without ever considering whether there might not possibly remain some *distant* branches of his family, capable of inheriting what, *they must* have a just and legal title to, though the direct line of it failed in himself. Accordingly the hei

took possession of his adventitious fortune, and, as wealth hides every defect, entered into alliance, and family connexions with persons of the most exalted rank, whose friendship and interest, supported by the immense riches he possessed, seemed to hold every inquiry into the justice of his title to them in defiance.

But a generous heart is not easily terrified in a just cause! The person before us, by his knowledge in his profession, and the uprightness of his practice, had acquired a fortune, and established a character, that placed him above the reach of slander, and the frown of power. He had been born under the patronage of this nobleman's house, and in the course of his business, had happened to get some insight into the settlements of his family, by which he found that it was not in his power to alienate the acquisitions of his illustrious ancestors, and give them to a stranger to their blood, while any of their descendants were in being. Such an act of injustice, therefore, raised the indignation and pity of his honest, generous heart, and he resolved to set it aside, notwithstanding the trouble and expense that must necessarily attend such an attempt.

The greatest discouragement to his undertaking, was the difficulty of finding out, and ascertaining the real heir, for the family was apparently extinct. But upon examining into the many alliances it had formerly made, which his known attachment gave him an easy opportunity of doing, he found, that, some generations before, a daughter had been married to a nobleman of a neighbouring dependant kingdom; the issue of which marriage, if any remained, was the true, and only representative of this noble house.

Having made this discovery, he went directly over to that kingdom, where, after a long and painful search, he had the mortification to find, that the family was reduced, by revolutions of government, and the calamity of the times, to two poor, low-bred, illiterate women, who had been married to mechanics of the meanest rank, and being left widows, and without children, now strove to procure a wretched subsistence, by joining their poor stocks to keep a chandler's shop, in a city, in the remotest part of the kingdom.

So melancholy an instance of the instability of human grandeur only raised his compassion, and confirmed his resolution to vindicate the blood of the illustrious patrons of his family, from such injustice and disgrace. Accordingly, he instantly relieved their immediate distresses, and, taking all the proper methods for ascertaining their descent, brought them over to this kingdom, lodged them in his own house, and treated them with the respect due to their noble blood and better hopes.

As soon as every thing was prepared for the great attempt, he regularly demanded a restitution of their right from the unjust possessor, and, upon his expected refusal, instituted a suit at law, for the recovery of it, in the prosecution of which, neither difficulties nor dangers, neither threats nor promises, could slacken his ardour, till he had obtained the justice he demanded for them. A detail of the proceedings, in such an affair, must be distressing to any human heart. It is sufficient to say, that every method which the art of man could invent to impose upon judgment, and defeat justice, was exerted against him, for several years, in hopes of exhausting his fortune, and wearing out the lives of his injured clients, (the elder of whom actually did die during the suit) and so disappointing his hopes. But justice at length prevailed, and he recovered, for them, the inheritance of their ancestors, leaving their antagonist only the immediate acquisitions of his reputed father, which, large as they are, he eagerly labours to increase, by every artifice of sordid avarice.

As for the heiress, the exalted gratitude she showed, proved *her* noble blood. As soon as she had executed all the forms of the law necessary to give her an absolute power over her fortune, and justly paid the expense, and rewarded the trouble of recovering it, as every branch of her family was extinct, she thought it but justice to settle her great fortune upon the generous recoverer of it. Nor was she content with leaving it *to him*, when she could no longer make use of it herself, *but obliging him* to quit the business of his profession, *she gave the* greater part of it into his immediate possession, *and, retiring* to one of the principal seats upon her estate, *spent the* remainder of her life in happiness and esteem; *the* goodness of her heart, and the true noble-

ness of her soul, drowning her want of early education, in the superior radiance of innate virtue.

The absolute possession of her entire fortune, which her death gave him much sooner than he wished, has made no alteration in the conduct of this worthy person, who invariably pursues the dictates of justice and benevolence in all his actions, making his wealth a blessing to all, whose wants and virtues marked them as objects worthy of his regard and assistance.

CHAP. XVI.

Continued: The happy fruits of unequal marriages. A short way to pay long debts. The pleasures of polite life. A bold stroke of female genius triumphant over law and religion: An unlucky mistake brings an improper visitor into too genteel company.

IMMEDIATELY below him, you see one of those instances of inconsistency which diversify the motley character of man. In the deep sunk lines of his face you may read learning and intense thought, as the placid serenity of his eye shows an heart warmed with piety and moral virtue; what pity, that a listless indolence of mind throws a shade over so bright a character, and, submission to the capricious yoke of female tyranny, makes him passively guilty of the very follies and vices most immediately opposite to his own virtue and good sense!

The pious care of a good father had so improved the eminent abilities with which nature had blessed this gentleman, by the most judicious education, that the promise of his youth gave hopes of his being an ornament and advantage to his age and country; but one indiscreet action overcast this pleasing prospect; and, in its *consequences*, has brought him to be the insignificant *thing* you see.

This was a marriage of mere inclination, with a pe son, *who* had neither fortune, beauty, nor merit, to ' ify his choice; and who yet has taken the unjustf

advantage of this indolence of his temper, to usurp an absolute an authority over him, as if she possessed them all, in the most eminent degree, and conferred upon him the benefit and obligation she herself received.

This makes his life one scene of the most irreconcilable inconsistency, between the wisdom and virtue of the very few actions, in which he is admitted to follow the dictates of his own judgment, and the follies and vices, into which she wantonly leads him every moment of his life. When I say vices, I mean those of dissipation, luxury, and extravagance; which, though the most injurious to society, and productive of the worst consequences to particulars, are yet too often looked upon in another light, and thought harmless at least, if not even commendable exertions of greatness, and generosity of spirit, and the proper use of affluence of fortune; for not content with the rational enjoyment of the fortune to which he raised her, in her proper sphere, she has assumed the absolute disposal of the whole, which she dissipates in every kind of fashionable folly and profusion, so as utterly to disable him from exerting the natural generosity and benevolence of his heart, in the extent and manner suited to his apparent wealth, and too often, from discharging the moral obligations of honesty, in the payment of his just and necessary debts.

Such an ungrateful abuse of obligation and influence may appear strange to you who have been so little conversant in the ways of man; but, to a more extended view of life, constant observation shows, that conferring a great benefit actually extinguishes gratitude, instead of raising it higher, and that the meaner the hands into which power is entrusted, the more exorbitant and tyrannical the use they make of it. Whether this arises from a consciousness of inability to pay so great a debt, and a consequent desire to cancel it, by an *absolute breach*, that may, at the same time, also support the *debtor's pride*, and seem to hide the obligation, by an *implied disavowal* in the former case, and from a desire *of returning* the tyranny felt before, in the latter, would *be a curious*, and not unprofitable disquisition, but shall *be reserved* to another place, where the occasion will *illustrate* it more fercibly; and only the justice of

observation, as to the present case in particular, proved by a few, out of innumerable instances of the same kind.

Of all the methods of dissipating wealth, and precipitating ruin, the most speedy and effectual is gaming. The present prevalence of the passion for this vice (for to call it by any other name would be a false tenderness) among all ranks and sexes, has been already often observed, as it is the characteristic of the times. However, to soften the horror, with which the barefaced practice of it, by the fairer sex, must strike every rational mind, it is blended with matters of mere amusement, and represented only as an innocent method of relieving conversation, when a number of persons meet in public company, which must otherwise languish and grow tiresome, or else fall upon improper subjects. This ingenious expedient has given rise to those meetings at the houses of the greatest fashion, which, from the noise, bustle, and confusion, inseparable from such crowds, are emphatically called *Routs*. In these, the mistress of the house always presides, and, consequently, attendance at them is looked upon as a compliment peculiar to her, and in which her husband has no share. For this reason, the greater the crowd collected, the more important the entertainer appears, and, therefore, no pains or expense is spared in inducing them to attend.

From the character already given of the wife of this gentleman, it may be concluded, that she exerted all her efforts, to make a figure by the frequency and greatness of her own routs, and by the profusion with which she gamed away her money at those of others. However, the mode was become so universal, and so eagerly pursued, that she soon found it was impossible for her to distinguish herself in the manner she desired, if she could not strike out some new way; but in this she was not long at a loss, the boldness of her genius prompting her to try an expedient, which no one before her had dared to venture upon.

This was to fix her routs upon the day set apart, by laws human and divine, for the duties of religion, and which, till then, had been held sacred to these alone from every kind of business and recreation. So bold stroke necessarily attracted the notice of the pub

and, the remissness of the legislature overlooking it, the crowds who, from an insensibility to those duties, were utterly at a loss how to get rid of so much time, gladly embraced such an opportunity, and flocked to her in numbers, that amply satisfied her ambition. Such success and impunity soon made her example imitated; but, as she had led the way, the merit of that secured her from being supplanted by any rival, and having her company decoyed from her.

The circumstances of her husband's birth, and the principles in which he had been educated, made him at first look upon such an insult upon religion with the strongest horror: but she made light of his scruples, and overruled all his objections, with such an absolute authority, that, for peace-sake, he was obliged to submit, and join in what he dared not contradict, till he has at length forfeited the acquaintance of every serious, rational, and religious person.

He was, at first, greatly affected at this falling off, and much distressed to think what it could proceed from, as he was not sensible of any deviation, in his own sentiments, from the principles which had made his acquaintance sought by every man of sense and virtue; but an accident soon opened his eyes to the absurdity of his situation.

The acquaintance, upon which he justly set the greatest value, was with a prelate of distinguished merit and virtue, an intimate friend of his deceased father. With him he spent the happiest hours of his life; and, in the wisdom and piety of his conversation, found relief for his sick heart, from the follies and riotous excesses which he was a slave to at home. Though he always met with the most benevolent and friendly reception from this worthy person, yet the coolness with which he found himself treated by some others, made his apprehension so ready to take alarm, that, upon his grace's not returning a visit or two, with the exactest punctuality, either from sickness, or some necessary engagement, he could not help expressing his uneasi[illegible] with such warmth, when he went to see him next [illegible] his grace, who, though he despised ceremony [illegible] not give pain or offence to any person, especially [illegible] he had so sincere an esteem, accounted [illegible]

late omission, by giving the real reason of it, and told him that he would do himself the pleasure of going to see him any day when he might be sure of finding him at home.

The gentleman answered, that, if his grace would appoint any day agreeable and convenient to him, he should gladly break through all engagements, and attend to receive him. This was a strain of complaisance which the prelate would not agree to, but insisted upon knowing what day he was usually at home, when he would call upon him, in a friendly manner, without putting him to the trouble of waiting for him in particular.

The affectionate, sincere manner in which this was said, was so pleasing to the gentleman, that it put him entirely off his guard, and he answered eagerly, and without ever considering that the next day was Sunday, when he was always at home. This was strictly true; he was always at home on that day, because it was his lady's day for seeing company; if he had in the least reflected on which, he would never have appointed his grace to come, as he was sensible, that he should for ever forfeit his acquaintance by it.

Though that was a day which the prelate dedicated to employments of a very different nature from paying complimentary visits, there was something in the earnestness of the manner in which the gentleman appointed it, that made him apprehend he had some secret uneasiness upon his mind, which he wanted to communicate, for assistance or advice, wherefore he complied without hesitation, nor did the other ever recollect the impropriety of what he had done, till it was too late to be remedied.

For his grace going the next evening, as he had promised, was not a little surprised to find a crowd of coaches before the door; for he had never heard of, nor suspected the scene that was acting, but, however, being informed that his friend was at home, he thought it best to proceed, and so, alighting from his chariot, was shown up into a room, where there was a mixed multitude seriously engaged at cards.

The very mention of such a scene would have stru

be at the sight; and particularly to be betrayed to it, as he imagined, on purpose to insult him, by a man whom he esteemed, and whose father he had sincerely loved. As soon as he had recovered himself from his astonishment, he directly turned about and departed, just as he was perceived by the master of the house, whose confusion at his own indiscretion, in appointing such a time, which he instantly recollected, is not to be described. He started from his chair, and exclaiming, "Good God, what have I done?"—would have followed him directly, if his lady, with whom he was playing, and who was just then *dealing*, had not stopped him, and insisted on knowing what was the matter.

"Good God, madam (said he, in the utmost confusion and distress) did not you see his grace come to the door this moment? I was to pay him a visit yesterday, and unfortunately engaged him to return it this evening, without ever considering that it was *your night*."—"And is that all, (answered she, who had gone on with her *deal*, and just turned up an *ace*) then pray sit still, and play your cards; you see *clubs are trumps!* his grace may come at a properer time, if he pleases!—"

Great as the husband's distress was, the accent with which these words were spoken, nailed him to his chair; so that he was forced to let his grace go home, and remain that night in an opinion so painful and injurious to him. But he laid not his head to rest, till he had written his grace a letter of apology for his mistake, which he candidly acknowledged, and conjured him to forgive, in the most earnest manner.

The imaginary insult, of being trepanned into such a scene, had at first provoked his grace beyond the usual evenness of his temper; but he had had time to cool before he received the letter (for he never lay down in anger, nor arose but in charity with all mankind) and reading it dispassionately, was so moved at the situation into which he found his friend had fallen, that all thoughts of personal resentment vanished, and he answered it with the greatest humanity and tenderness, drawing the folly and danger of such a complaisance, in their proper strength, and urging his return to the practice of his own principles, with every argument of reason, virtue, and religion, promising to renew his acquaintance with

same, or greater intimacy than before, as soon as he should desist from such an impious profanation and abuse of a day made sacred to piety and devotion, by every civil and religious law; till he should do which, it was inconsistent with his character and principles to keep up any farther intercourse with a person in such circumstances.

The justice of this reasoning was acknowledged by the person to whom it was addressed, and the loss which followed the neglect of it, severely felt; but he wanted resolution to resume the authority that was necessary for putting it in execution, and so poorly submits, against his better judgment, to all the impositions of a tyranny, which was first erected upon his folly, and still subsists by his indolence.

CHAP. XVII.

Continued: Confusion worse confounded, rout on rout. The transformation of a constable into a devil, introduces a story of the devil's terrifying a famous cardinal, by dancing in masquerade, and frightens a polite assembly into a fit of devotion, which lasts an whole night with most of them. A glimpse of the courage of a modern man of honour.

BUT, though such meetings as these are held in apparent defiance of the laws, you must not imagine, that those who go to them are insensible of the impropriety, or unapprehensive of the danger of such a conduct. By danger, I mean the immediate one, from the secular power, for that of the divine wrath they never give themselves the trouble of thinking about.

Of this a remarkable instance happened at this place, not very long after the affair of his grace. A gentleman of humour, as well as reason, who was intimate in this gentleman's family, and had often strove in vain to convince his lady of the disagreeable consequences that might attend such an avowed disregard to decency, at least, resolved to take another method, and try what effect ridicule and shame might have, where every argument from reason had failed.

Accordingly, one night in the midst of the riot, he contrived to have it whispered in the company, that a neighbouring constable remarkable for punishing every offence, for which he did not receive a proper composition, intended to come with the church-wardens, and all the parish officers at his heels, and interrupt their diversion; and dressing himself exactly like the constable, whom he nearly resembled in size and figure, and buckling on a wooden

leg, like him, in he stalks among them, just as the servant announced his coming, by the name of the constable, whom he personated.

It is impossible to describe the astonishment and confusion of the whole company at such an attack! Though there were several present, whose rank placed them above his authority, surprise and consciousness of their guilt so far deprived them of all resolution and presence of mind, that they joined in the just fear of the rest, and attempted to make an ignominious escape with them. The candles were all instantly put out, the windows broke open, and stars and ribbons were seen among the crowd that leaped into the court, and ran through the streets, without regarding dirt or cold, while the more timorous sex stood petrified with fear, uncertain which to face, shame or danger.

In the mean time, the pretended constable took the advantage to slip off his wooden leg, tie-wig, and long cloak, just as the servants had taken the alarm, and come in to see what was the matter, and so had an opportunity of enjoying the whole scene, without danger of being suspected for the author of it.

The first question which the lady of the house, whose active spirit first recovered itself, asked, was, What was become of the constable, and who let him in? At the mention of a constable, the servants all stared, as not one of them knew any thing of him; and the very servant, who had announced his entrance, declared he had never heard a word of him, for as he had not told his office, not one of them had the least notion of such a person's presuming to come among them. But upon telling his name, and describing his appearance, their surprise was changed the other way: they all remembered his entrance, but every one of them positively insisted that he had not gone back; so that the question now was, What could possibly have become of him? as his leaping out of the window, as the others had gallantly done, was neither necessary, nor indeed possible for him to do, maimed as he was.

While they were all forming sagacious conjectures, on *so strange* and unaccountable an affair, the metamorphosed constable, who had joined in the conversation said to an old lady, who seemed more strongly affect

than any other of the company, that the address of this [illegible] hair put him in mind of one not very unlike it in many circumstances, which he had read, in accounts of good authority, to have happened in France, during the minority of Lewis XIV.

This raised the curiosity of all who heard him, and immediately crowded round him, and desired him to [illegible] t. At first he seemed rather unwilling, and very gaily [illegible] y prefaced his story, with declaring, that for his part he believed nothing of the matter, though he owned it was related by writers of undoubted veracity, and attested in a manner almost beyond any fact he had ever read in history. Having thus prepared them, for something extraordinary, he proceeded thus, "You know, Madam, (addressing himself to the old lady, to whom he had first mentioned it, and who he knew plumed herself not a little upon her knowlege in secret history, everything that bore the name of which she had read and implicitly believed every word of) that in the minority of Lewis the Great, Mazarine, who governed the kingdom, took every method of diverting the attention of the young monarch from state-affairs, by all kinds of pleasurable entertainment that could be devised."—"True sir," answered the old lady, who could not possibly resist her desire of showing her knowledge.) "And that is said to have influenced the conduct of his future life, in that expensive pomp and vain magnificence, which attracted the admiration of foreigners, while it exhausted and ruined his subjects. Hem! hem! but I beg pardon, sir, pray don't let me interrupt you."—

"As this Mazarine was an Italian, you know, Madam," continued he, to which she assented with a nod, as she constantly did) it was natural for him to have a fondness for the entertainments of his own country; he therefore introduced the Italian opera into France. The first time it was presented, one of the principal parts of the entertainment consisted of a comic dance that was performed by six of the nimblest caperers in all Italy. At first they went on expertly, and with great applause; but immediately found themselves at a loss, and were [illegible] to proceed any farther, being put out by the [illegible] of a strange dancer, who came among them, [illegible] could tell how, and disconcerted the entire scheme

of their dance, which had been calculated only for their own number. This at length threw them into such confusion, that they were obliged to stand still! when the manager of the entertainment coming to them, to see what was the matter, perceived the cause of their confusion, and obliged them all to unmask (for they were dressed exactly alike, and wore masks) that he might detect and seize the impertinent intruder; when, to his and the utter astonishment of every one present, he vanished as unaccountably as he had come, though the eyes of the whole house were upon him, and there appeared to be no more than the original number, and the same persons, who began the dance. I believe, madam, you may recollect the other circumstances of the story, which I do not choose to mention, on this occasion; they are told in the *secret memoirs* of cardinal Mazarine." "I do, sir, (returned she, with great emotion) remember something of it. But really"—"Dear madam, (interrupted another, whose curiosity was raised too high to bear a moment's delay) pray let the gentleman proceed! When he has ended, if he omits any thing, you may then inform us farther? Pray, sir, do proceed."

"Why really, madam, (continued he, under some apparent confusion) I am at a loss how to act, and had much rather be excused: however, I must beg leave to observe, that, for my own part, I do not believe a single syllable of all the stories of ghosts, and apparitions, and devils, and such-like stuff, that ever were told; though this story in particular is told in a manner, and confirmed with circumstances, not easy to be contradicted."

This solemn preface raised the curiosity of them all to a torture, and alarmed apprehensions, that would not admit of a moment's suspense. "Dear sir, pray proceed," (echoed from an hundred mouths at once, as they pressed closer to him) the gentleman bowed and continued: "The whole company was now thrown into confusion as great as that of the dancers: they had all reckoned a seventh person, and the connoisseurs in particular, had observed that one of them had shown greater agility, and cut higher, than any one they had ever seen before, and indeed than they thought it possible for any human person to do. This hint alarmed the

whole house, and it was immediately concluded that the devil had maliciously joined in the dance, on purpose to spoil their sport: an opinion which one or two unlucky circumstances seem to give weight to, which were, that all the dancers had been dressed like devils, the opera being *The Fall of Man*, and the dance exhibited, as a triumph of the devils, upon the occasion, and that it was acted on a *Sunday evening*. Trifling as these circumstances really were, they threw the whole audience into a consternation; some directly fancied the candles burnt blue, others that the place smelt strong of sulphur; and one more impudently foolish than all the rest, insisted that he had observed the *cloven* foot; but what is most surprising of all was that the cardinal, who could not be suspected of superstition, was so affected by it, that he ordered the house to be dismissed directly, and that opera never to be performed again, nor any other, on a *Sunday*, which was observed during his life, and for some time after."

It is impossible for words to describe the situation of the company, at the conclusion of this story. At the mention of the candles burning blue, all turned their eyes about, and fancied the same; as to their smelling sulphur, it was more than imagination, the pretended constable having taken an opportunity, while they were all in confusion, to throw, unperceived, a composition which he had brought with him on purpose, into the fire, which had filled the room with a most sulphureous smell, and more than one of the company declared, *they thought* they saw a cloven foot, or something very like it, fly out of the window.

The scene was now changed to an appearance really frightful. Every lengthened visage was as pale as death, every haggard eye staring in wild affright. The old lady, to whom the tale had been particularly addressed, confirmed every syllable of it, and added many circumstances from secret histories, of her own immediate invention; and every one present had some similar story to tell in support of it; till they at length terrified one another to that degree, that they were afraid to look around, or even to raise their voices to bid their servants prepare for their departure.

The gentleman, pleased at the success of his artifice, resolved to improve it to the utmost, and take advantage of their present situation, to work them up to some action, that should make them ashamed, at least, ever to be guilty of the like profanation of that sacred day again: "Defend us, Heaven! (exclaimed he, fixing his eyes with horror, on one of the windows) What can that be?" This completed their terror: they all believed the devil was returning to destroy them, for the boldest of them all had not the spirit to turn her eyes, to see what he looked at, and joined most devoutly in his ejaculation to Heaven for defence.

He saw this was the proper moment for what he intended, and so dropping suddenly upon his knees, in which they all followed his example, he repeated aloud the confession in the service of the church, adding, with particular emphasis, to the sins of commission, this of breaking the sabbath, and to those of omission, the neglect of the duties of religion, to which it was devoted; and concluded with a solemn vow, never to be guilty of either again, if Heaven would remit its wrath, and spare them for the present.

All the while he had been performing this ceremony, he had kept his eyes fixed upon the window, and, at the end of it, exclaimed in a rapture, "Our vows are heard! it vanishes! the danger is over!"—Upon which he arose, as did they all, and fell into a most serious and devout conversation, upon so signal an instance of divine favour and mercy, while their coaches and chairs were getting ready to carry them home, when they retired with thoughts very different from those which they usually brought from such places.

Though every lady in the company had been frightened into a fit of devotion, by what had happened, none suffered so severely by it as the lady of the house, who, notwithstanding the public contempt she showed for religion, was so fearful of ghosts and hobgoblins, that after having persuaded her husband to lay out a large sum of money (much more than prudence would have permitted) in repairing and fitting up, in the modern taste, a beautiful antique castle that was upon his estate, upon hearing that a particular apartment in it was

be prevailed upon to sleep a second night in it. As soon, therefore, as the company was all gone, and she left to her own meditations, her fears recurred so fast upon her, that she fell into fits, which seemed to threaten her with the total loss of her reason, raving of devils and damnation, and railing against cards, and sabbath-breaking, with all the vehemence of a modern enthusiast, among his mad brethren in *Moorfields*. But this did not last long! the gentleman, to avoid detection, had been obliged to leave his tie-wig, cloak, and wooden leg behind him. These, which were found upon clearing out the apartments, unravelled the whole mystery of the affair, and showed that it had been all a trick; nor was the lady long at a loss for the author of it; (for the first mention of the discovery had put an end to her fits of fear and devotion) the pains he had often taken to persuade her against these meetings, on this particular day, and the zeal he showed in the whole affair, convinced her it was all transacted by him. This threw her into the most violent rage against him; but as it was impossible to prove, and he denied the fact when charged with it, she could have no other satisfaction of him, than that of disappointing his design, by returning to her former practice with double eagerness, and aggravating the scandal of it by every act of irreligion and profaneness that she could devise, in which hopeful course she still persists.

As for the male part of the company, who had so manfully leaped out of the windows, and made their escape through the cold and dirt of the night; some of them caught colds, that cost them their noses, and one or two lost their lives in duels, which they fought in vindication of their characters, from so scandalous an aspersion, for it was thought proper to deny the whole story.

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued: Maternal tenderness of an uncommon kind. A most magnificent wedding disappointed, by an unhappy instance of female frailty. A new method of calculating general opinion. An unlucky accident changes a scene of joy into grief, and affords an useful caution to old age and infirmity, to guide their steps with proper care. A dragon battle. An instance of fell revenge makes room for a stranger, who restores general harmony.

NOR is she content with offering this flagrant insult to religion and law; the tenderest feelings of nature are also wantonly made the objects of her grossest ridicule, in the absurdity of which, to show her matrimonial power in its utmost plenitude, she obliges her passive mate to bear his foolish part, and sacrifice common sense, as he had before done conscience, to her capricious tyranny.

As she has no children, upon whom she can display maternal care and love, she affects holding the important and inexpressible tenderness and duty of these, in the lowest contempt; and, to show this, in the most glaring colours, prostitutes them upon some insignificant animal, in all the solemn pomp and parade of ceremony, usual on such occasions, to make the ridicule more striking.

The present worthy object of her affection is an owl, which she caresses and treats with all the endearments of a darling child; calling it the fondest names, talking to it for hours together, every Sunday morning, and entertaining her most intimate acquaintances with a particular detail of its engaging qualities and sensible actions nor does her humour stop here; she dresses her fav

ite in all the phantastic extravagance of the mode, makes a complimentary inquiry after its health part of the ceremonial of her acquaintance, and celebrates the anniversary of its birth, with the expensive magnificence of a public entertainment, when the dear creature is produced, with all the ceremony and state of a royal babe, to receive the praise and caresses of the company; and to finish the farce, her husband is obliged to act his part, and join with her in receiving the congratulations paid upon the happy occasion.

Perhaps you will imagine that such an unaccountable caprice is meant to expose the servility of complaisance, and show to what an height it is capable of being strained, to gratify the humours of the rich. Such a conclusion is not unnatural, nor the general satire implied in it, unjust; but here, in respect to her, it does not hold, for she has no such aim in view, nor thinks of any thing beyond the immediate gratification of her own whim; on the contrary, she would be as ready to pay the same compliment to any of her acquaintance, if they required it: indeed the share she makes her husband take in the ceremony, bears a different construction, and is planly seen to be designed as a most severe and insolent ridicule upon him, as it is no secret, that she imputes her want of children to his fault; a charge, which his blind submission to her will, makes not improbable.

But this is not the first instance of the extravagance of her humour, nor he the only one who has been made the object of public ridicule by it; though he has never missed of his share.

Before her present favourite, a cat engrossed her fondness, in as eminent a degree, but unhappily lost that and her life together, by a slip of female frailty: for, slighting the example of her mistress's chastity, she had taken an opportunity to carry on an intrigue with a cat in the neighbourhood, whom she used to meet in the evenings upon the leads of the house, while her mistress was abroad, and her own attendants engaged in parties of pleasure below stairs.

This unfortunately broke through all her mistress's great designs, who was just then in treaty for a marriage, between her and the male favourite of a lady of quality in Paris, the preliminaries of which were all settled, an

nothing remaining, but to determine where the wedding should be celebrated; she, for the honour of the sex, demanding, that the gallant should wait upon his mistress, and the other insisting upon the example of all royal marriages, where the bride goes to the bridegroom; a reason so just, that the heroine of our tale disputed it, only for form-sake, and was preparing to set out for Paris, with her husband and a grand retinue, to solemnize the wedding, as soon as the proxy, which had been proposed to be sent by the other party, should arrive.

Upon the first discovery of it, therefore, by apparent symptoms of the frail one's pregnancy, the whole house was in an uproar, every servant turned off, and a council of her most intimate friends directly summoned, to consider, what was to be done in such an emergency, and how the treaty of marriage could be broken off, without giving offence to the other parties, or exposing her own disgrace. After much and mature deliberation, it was resolved to send an express immediately to Paris, to prevent the proxy's setting out, and to apologize for breaking off the marriage on account of a pre-contract, into which madam Grimalkin had inconsiderately entered, without the knowledge of her mistress; and to make this embassy the more respected and effectual, the person thought most proper to be sent upon it was her husband, who accordingly was obliged to set out on his journey directly, but was rescued from the ridicule of it, by a fit of the gout which arrested him at his first stage, so that he was forced to transfer the honour of the employment to his gentleman, who acquitted himself of it with great reputation.

But this was not the only distress, in which this unfortunate misbehaviour of the favourite involved her mistress. In the first transports of her rage she had ordered her to be taken out of her presence, and publicly vowed that she would never see her more: but, when her resentment cooled a little, her former fondness returned, and she could not bear the thought of abandoning her, for a first fault, to the low life of a common cat, or depriving herself of the pleasure she enjoyed in her company. But the difficulty was how to receive her again into favour, consistently with the purity of her own character, and without seeming in some measure, to countenance

incontinency she had been guilty of, by such levity. While she was in this perplexity between delicacy and love, her instructer in the important science of gaming most luckily happened to pay her a morning visit, to give her a lecture, and inform her of some new discoveries he had made in his mysterious art. As she knew that he was a nice casuist, the moment he approached her toilet, she informed him of the whole affair, and desired his advice.

After taking some time to deliberate upon the case, "Madam (said the sage, shaking his hoary head, and extending the fore-finger of his right hand) this is a very difficult point to decide: however, I have calculated the chances on each side, and have found that the odds are as seven, one-fourth, and two-fifteenths to five, nearly (for it would be too great a trouble for you to examine the proof of it in more minute fractions) in favour of your receiving the offender into your good graces again, which I prove thus: All the ladies in the world are liable to some failing or other; now as from weakness of constitution, derived from the goodness of their families, or brought on by their own intense application to the pleasures of polite life, there are not above five out of almost eight, who are guilty of this particular foible, (I mean among people of fashion, such as you converse with) it is evident that there will be almost eight who will not condemn your conduct, for five who will; it being the general maxim, always to exclaim against the faults of which we are guilty ourselves, to deceive the the generality of the world, and make an appearance of our being innocent of them. If this reasoning does not appear plain, I will draw it out at length, and adapt the calculations to the general rules of Whist, so that they may be proved by the cards, as the method most familiar to you, to satisfy your own scruples, and answer the objections of your friends, for ladies cannot be too circumspect in affairs of this kind, where so deep a stake is played for. The scheme will not take up much time to draw, nor be attended with much expense, not above two pieces, or some such trifle: for you know I never of the least unreasonable with my friends."

This judicious solution was so agreeable to her she saw the justice of it directly, and embraced it

out a moment's delay, ordering the poor delinquent to be immediately brought to her, and after a little gentle chiding, almost killing it with her caresses. As to the sage casuist, she thanked him for his decision, and having received his lecture, desired him to reduce his arguments into the form he proposed, as soon as he pleased, as she never had any objection to his demands, and then despatched cards immediately to all her acquaintances, to inform them of the reconciliation, and invite them to an entertainment, which she gave on the happy occasion.

Accordingly they all attended, and poured out their compliments in the most polite profusion; but, in the height of their joy, an unfortunate accident happened, that changed their congratulation into condolence.

As the dear creature was handed about, to receive the caresses of the company, an elderly gentlewoman, to show her extreme fondness for it, by keeping it as long as she could upon her bosom, would needs carry it herself to a lady of quality, who sat at the other side of the room, and desired to have it brought to her; but, striving to be more alert, than her paralytic tottering would permit, she fell at her length upon the floor, and almost crushed the poor animal to death.

You may conceive what a confusion this threw the whole company into: the cat screamed, the old lady roared, and the voice of all present echoed a general exclamation: and to heighten the distress, they all got up at once, and, rushing together to raise the fallen pair, hindered each other so, that they lay struggling in no very agreeable situation, or decent posture on the floor; for the cat, enraged at the injury she had received, exerted all her strength for revenge, and fixed her claws in the face and neck of her supposed enemy, growling with the most envenomed spite, which made the innocent author of her disaster roar, kick, and sprawl, with all her might, as she was unable to disengage herself from the claws of her furious adversary, or even rise from the ground where she lay.

At length, some of the company made a shift to raise and part the combatants; when the poor gentlewoman was hurried to her chair, with her face and neck all in stream of blood, the attention of the company being

tirely taken up with the fright of the lady of the house for the danger of her favourite.

The spirit and strength which she had showed in avenging of the injury she had received, was some consolation to her mistress, as it seemed to show that she could not have been very much hurt; but one of the company, happening to mention her condition, renewed her fright, and made her resolve instantly to send for one of the most eminent male practitioners of the obstetric art, to inquire into the circumstances of the case, and administer any assistance that might be necessary, upon the unhappy occasion.

Accordingly, a servant was instantly despatched, by the mistress's name, to the doctor, who attended without a moment's delay, imagining, from the urgency of the message, that some lady of distinction might be taken ill in her house, as he knew the lady herself could have no occasion for him, and the footman could give him no further information, than that some accident had happened in the company, of which there was the usual crowd. As soon as he arrived, he was shown directly into the drawing-room, whither the lady, with a few select friends, had retired, where one of them leading him up to her, and lifting up an handkerchief, that covered the poor dear creature in her lap, opened the case to him, for the mistress's grief was so great that she was not able to speak.

It is impossible to describe the rage, into which this threw the doctor: he looked upon it as an insult not to be forgiven; and, as he could not wreak his resentment upon ladies, by any act of violence upon their persons, resolved to show it, by his treatment of the creature, for which they implored his assistance. Accordingly he stooped very gravely, and taking it out of the mistress's lap, laid it on the ground, and, setting his heel upon its head, crushed it to death, before any one had time to interpose in its behalf; then turning to the lady, whose astonishment was so great, that she had not power to speak, "There, Madam! (said he) your favourite is delivered from all danger of abortion; but take care, how you provoke another time, the resentment of a man, whom nobody provokes with impunity."—Saying this, he

turned about, and marched away, leaving the whole company, and particularly the mistress of the innocent victim of his vengeance, in a condition not to be expressed: she wept, beat her breast, stamped with her feet upon the floor, and vowed the bitterest vengeance; nor is it easy to say, how far her passion might have transported her, had not a gentleman entered the room that very moment, with a young owl in his hand, which he had taken out of the nest that morning.

The sovereign remedy for a woman's grief, for the loss of any favourite, whether a cat, a sparrow, or an husband, is a new one. The sight of the owl instantly struck her: it had such a gravity and wisdom in its looks, that she resolved to make it the confidant of all her secrets, and the only counsellor from whom she would take advice that should contradict her inclinations. Accordingly, poor *Grimalkin* was ordered to be taken away, and the new favourite received in her place. This restored the general harmony and good humour; and the entertainment, that was designed to celebrate Mrs. *Puss's* restoration to her mistress's bosom, served for the reception of the stranger. However, though a new favourite consoled the mistress for the loss of the former, she did not neglect to pay proper respect to its remains: the body was carefully laid up till next morning, when an eminent undertaker was sent for, and orders given for her decent interment.

CHAP. XIX.

More happy fruits of female government. Th of an eminent patroness of the polite arts. culiar method of showing a distinguished t judgment. An extraordinary charge in a b inn.

TURN your eye now to the other side, and that superannuated figure of foppery, at the u of the table, who plumes himself like a peacoc the gaudiness of his dress, and gives his con with an ostentation and affected dignity that wo grace a prince. He is another instance of th fruits of woman's government. With all the im he assumes here, in his own house he is a perfec of no consequence in himself, but as he adds t his wife.

So insignificant a character may be thought i of affording either instruction or improvement, s to reward the trouble of displaying it; but then duces another, to which it serves as a shade to s glaring colours of it in a proper light, and illus vanity, as the former did the vice of female cap ambition.

He had the solid advantage of entering into a very affluent fortune; but instead of making it of happiness to himself, and benefit to society, tional and benevolent use; to gratify the most avarice, he gave up every enjoyment of it, by n an heiress, the known vanity, imperiousness, and gancy of whose temper, so far overbalanced th ness of her wealth, that no man of reason and spi had any other possible way of earning a morsel would have linked his fate to her.

The consequence was just what he deser moment he became her husband, she assum

absolute authority over him, and all he possessed, as if the words of their connexion had been inverted, and he had made the covenant of duty and obedience to her, and instantly set up for the patroness of merit in all the fine arts and sciences, to show her superiority of genius over the rest of her sex.

Such an ambition directly marked her out for a bubble to all the needy, sharping adventurers, who, under the pretence of such merit, fly like locusts to this phantastic people, from every part of the globe, in swarms, that literally devour the fruits of the land in such a manner, as to starve the natives, who are engaged in the same pursuits, and thereby discourage and prevent their rising to that excellence, the want of which is objected to them.

For though there may not perhaps be any natural difference between the sexes in the abilities of mind, necessary to form a proper judgment of any science, yet the female labours under such disadvantages from a wrong education, that it is next to impossible for a woman to exert the faculties of reason in any distinguished degree; the time, when the seeds of knowledge should be sown, being devoted to trifles or absurdities, that deserve a worse name, which by these means take such possession of the mind, as to influence the conduct of the whole life. Some rare instances indeed there are, of women, who break through this oppression, and rise above the prejudices of such an education, to a degree of eminence equal to the foremost of the other sex; but this requires such an uncommon strength of genius, as is indulged to very few; and was by no means the lot of this person. All her pretensions to taste and judgment being founded on her ability to reward them liberally in others. But, even in this, her injudicious vanity has always marred the good effects of her generosity and wealth; for, not being able herself to discern real merit, and disdaining to follow the opinions of others, for fear of passing unnoticed among the crowd, she blundered upon the most unlucky method of distinguishing herself, that ever entered into an human head; for, as if her opinion was of more weight than that of all the wo beside, she sets up to contradict the voice of the pu

lways patronizes those whom they reject and
y.

ch a conduct, as I said, naturally lays her open to
mpositions of flattery and fraud: Though she pro-
es a taste for all the finer arts, music is the particular
ct of her favour and encouragement: As soon as a
performer arrives, if he is in distress, as is almost
ways the case, he immediately waits upon this lady, to
plore her patronage; this necessarily introduces a
splay of his abilities, which she never fails to reward
munificently, and profess her approbation of, but cau-
tiously, and in general terms only, that she may retract
it afterwards, should the public unluckily join with her,
for her opinion is always in the opposite scale to that of
the rest of the world. But, if he is disapproved, she
takes him under her immediate protection; she invites
him constantly to her table, she supplies him with mo-
ney, with the most boundless profusion, and makes
parties among that crowd of company, which he, wealth,
and turn for expensive pleasure constantly collect about
her, to support him against the favourites of the public:
and to show, that she does this merely from a spirit of
contradiction, should the most eminent of these fall off,
or be eclipsed by the superior merit of a rival, she in-
stantly forgets the animosities with which she pursu
his success, and receives him into her protection and
tronage, admiring his grossest faults, and praising
very defects she decried before; while her gentle ma
obliged to submit to this dissipation of his darling we
and to be the humble echo of her opinions, in all
various changes, without daring to interpose a w
vindication of his own judgment or authority; but
ing himself happy in being permitted to make use
pittances of his fortune, which he thus contributes
lic charities, to give him an opportunity of assum
momentary consequence you see.

The many impositions which she has suffer
these rapacious sycophants, would be sufficient
any person see the folly of such a conduct, w
wilfully resolved against conviction. I sha
tion one instance, for the grossness and sim
and so conclude the disagreeable repres

To show her elegant taste in this most pleasing entertainment, and raise an opinion of her importance, in the polite world, among her tenants and neighbours in the country, whither she retires for the summer, she always takes with her some of her favourite performers, who cannot fail to please persons who never had an opportunity of hearing any better; and sometimes even will condescend, upon very particular occasions, as when she gives public entertainments, to comply so far with the taste of others, as to send for some of those who are highest in general repute; though her country seat is almost at the extremity of the kingdom; which makes the expense of such a compliment very considerable; for she defrays all the charge of travelling, besides giving a very genteel gratification for the trouble.

Upon an occasion of this kind, some little time since, she sent for a musician of note, to conduct a concert, which she designed to give her neighbours, in the highest taste. The man, finding he had nothing to pay, an unlimited credit being established for him, at every stage upon the road, travelled down in the highest luxury to her house, where his performance was also rewarded with a very handsome present. But, whether he thought it unequal to his merit and trouble, or imagining that he should never be sent for thither again, resolved to make the most of the present opportunity; upon his return he took up money at every inn he stopped at on the road, upon the credit given him, and, where he lay, constantly prevailed upon one of the compliant females who attended, to sleep with him for a considerable gratification, which he also ordered to be charged to his bill, and left for this lady to pay.

Such an insult might be thought to merit her resentment; but as the punishing of it would open scenes, which must lay her under a necessity of discontinuing her favourite practice of sending for such persons, and expose her extravagance and taste, to public ridicule and censure, she thought proper to overlook it as unnoticed, and pay the bills, without seeming to examine into the particulars of them; and to prevent the story's receiving credit, should it happen to be made known, continued to countenance the man, and even invited him into the country with her the next summer, when

played her many tricks of the same kind, finding he escaped so easy after this.

I have dwelt so long upon the characters of this and the former lady, to save myself trouble upon other occasions, as their actions afford a general representation of female life. I mean the lives of those females, who, looking upon themselves as raised above the rest of their sex, by rank or fortune, think it necessary to show their superiority, by breaking through all the rules which reason and religion have established for their conduct.

How prevailing the force of such examples is, the instances just given sufficiently show. Indeed, such is the implicit adoration paid to wealth, such the reigning passion, for joining in what is called good company, and partaking of their luxurious entertainments, that, let the rich and great propose any folly and vice, however gross and absurd, as the means of introduction to their tables and parties of pleasure, they will be sure of finding persons enough to comply with their humours. These instances are taken from the most licentious caprices, and absurd vanity of this ambition. The former admit of no excuse; and though the latter may be less blameable in themselves, and even bear a kind of resemblance to virtues in many cases, the success is not much better nor even sufficient to justify this ambition in females, to quit the subordinate sphere allotted them by nature, to strive to make a figure in the busier and more extensive province of man.

Nor is this the only useful instruction that may be drawn from a display of these characters. It shows the ridiculous and unhappy situation into which man, when he poorly gives up the reins put into his hands by providence, and submits to the government of a woman whom he was born to command.

CHAP. XX

ıediable defect in human policy. The history of t eminent personage. A new way of paying the of guardianship. A daughter's disobedience in ıg to comply with more than paternal love. The f the tale extracts profit from charity, and as- he rights of agency, in defiance of public opin- d shame.

: notice of the person immediately below him, ıave just given you an account of. By his large make nature seemed to design him for some of : laborious employments in life; but his genius to other pursuits, and made him depend upon ɔness of his mind, rather than the strength of his : his support and advancement in the world. ·pravity of man makes many employments neces- community, for public safety and advantage, the n of which is attended with so many circumstan- ·rror in the punishment of unhappy delinquents, ıan, who is not destitute of that sympathetic ten- which is the highest honour of his nature, can ndertake them. This throws them upon persons, vely speaking, the most unfit for such offices; overty obliges them to practise every iniquity ·ofession into which they were first initiated by l whose hearts are hardened by habit, against ntiment of virtue and honour, every finer feel- ıture. Thus, the hangman, whose crimes first him to take up the horrid trade, continues it :ress, and puts to death wretched offenders, for ch he is hourly guilty of himself, without com- r remorse, till he is detected, and suffers the ishment from another hand. But this is one o

In an employment not very dissimilar in its na
though dignified by a less opprobrious name, has
person displayed his abilities, for many years, to th
tonishment of all who have been witnesses of his exp
There is a mystery in such scenes too horrid for r
sentation, I shall therefore pass them over, and b
relate a few anecdotes of his private life, which wil
ficiently enable you to form a judgment of his v
character.

A man who, from one of the poorest employmen
which a wretched life can be honestly sustained,
unexpectedly to the possession of a considerable for
by the death of a relation, who would have suffere
to perish for want of a morsel of bread, had some
conceived such a confidence in this person, that
his own death, in a very little time after his elev
he entrusted his orphan daughter to his care, tog
with what he had been able to save for her, durin
short possession of his estate, the inheritance of it pa
away, for want of his having male issue, to another h
of the family.

During the minority of his ward, he took care to
cate her according to the direction of her father
decent but frugal manner, as the fortune she had a
to expect, was not sufficient to place her above a n
sity of industry and economy; but upon her comi
age, he was obliged to act another part: He had
the greatest part of her fortune in his pleasure
strange to think! even he had a passion for the plea
of polite life, and was admitted into the genteelest
pany, to enjoy them, without any inquiry into hi
racter or station, while he was able to bear the exp
Such a situation must have been distressing to any
man, but the business of his profession soon sugges
method of disengaging himself, which his exte
principles made no objection to his putting in pra

On the day before she was to receive from hi
fortune, which was the whole foundation of her
hopes in life, he showed no signs of uneasiness, bu
fidently gave her notice, that he designed to
the moment she was entitled to receive it, and

trust. Such a conduct naturally gave satisfaction to every person concerned, and entirely removed some apprehensions which they had entertained before. But they soon found reason to change their sentiments again. For, that very evening he took an occasion to go through a by street, just after it became dark, and when he thought himself in no danger of being taken notice of, where he rolled himself in the kennel, battered his head against the stones, as if he had received several severe strokes, and scattered some papers he had in his pocket for the purpose, about the street, and then, in that abused appearance, and with all the symptoms of affright and despair in his looks, ran into a neighbouring coffee-house, where he told the company, that he had been just knocked down, and robbed of a considerable sum of money which he was to pay the next day.

Some of them instantly went to the place in which he said this had happened, where they found his hat and wig, and the papers he had left for them, which at first gained credit to the story; but when the general tenor of his character, and the circumstances of his being to pay that sum the next day, came to be considered, the whole artifice was seen through, especially as he never offered to prove where he had received the money, nor gave any reason for his carrying such a sum about him, the very bulk and weight of which, (for he said it was all in specie, to prevent too particular an inquiry about bank-notes) must have been a trouble and encumbrance to him; but barely alleged that he had always kept the money by him in cash, ever since he had received it: and if any one expressed the least doubt of what he said, or desired to have these particulars better explained, he directly charged them with making insinuations injurious to his character and credit, which he threatened to vindicate by law.

Such a menace, from such a man, was not ineffectual! The injured lady was absolutely deprived of every means of doing herself justice; and, as the poor are ever friendless, no unconcerned person dared to enter into a dispute with one of his known experience, and who was acquainted with methods of putting his me

find it easy to guard against; besides, it was unive
and well known, that, even if the whole affair co
detected, he was not able to make satisfaction.
every circumstance concurred to give success
scheme, though not quite so smoothly as he could
and the poor young lady, having no redres
obliged to return to the low state from which sh
so lately been raised, and in which she still live
of servitude; happy had she never been flattere
better hopes.

But, though he could escape the reach of man,
justice was not to be defeated so, whose vengean
tacked him in so signal a manner, as plainly show
just retaliation of the unerring hand of Heaven.

Seared as his heart must be by such a life,
more general feelings of humanity, nature was no
debauched, and he felt the tenderness and fond a
of paternal love in all its force, for an only dau
on whose education, in all the polite accomplishm
the more exalted ranks of life, he spared neithe
nor expense, supporting and adorning her in th
teelest manner, and taking evident delight in lavi
on such uses, all that he could acquire by every
ble means.

Such a conduct, though carried to an exces
something so amiable in it, that in some meas
palliated the blacker parts of his character, an
weakened the credit of many of the stories told
But just as he was beginning to enjoy the fruits
care, by seeing his daughter's eminence in the
plishments he had taken such pains to teach univ
acknowledged, an event happened, that not o
p[illegible]ed him of that pleasure, but also turned the n
all his former fondness into the foulest reproach.

His daughter was observed, for some time, t
the appearance of the most poignant distress.
ever she was asked the cause of it, by any
friends, she would melt into a flood of tears, nor
give any other answer, than that she was the mo
rable of human beings. This raised a variet
jectures, some of which were far from being

lady of her acquaintance, who had seemed to show the liveliest sense of her grief, and begged her protection from the cruelty of her father, which, she said, was too great to be borne, ever since she had refused to gratify an impious passion which he had long entertained for her, and which had been the motive of all his care and expense in her education.

Such stories are so shocking to human nature, that they are generally doubted; but his character gave such weight to any charge against him, that this was universally believed. At first he made some efforts to induce his daughter to return to him; but she was deaf to his solicitations, and, being destitute of every other means of support, threw herself upon the favour of the public, and lives by her skill in the accomplishments which he took so much pains to have her taught. This was not only a severe mortification to his pride, but also made him be looked upon with such horror and detestation, that he has been ever since secluded from the society of every person of virtue or reputation.

I see you wonder at the inconsistency of such a person's appearing in the situation you see him at present, contributing to a public charity for the relief of the calamities of the poor. To one who can look no farther into man, than as he appears at the present moment, such a conduct justly appears unaccountable; but consider, that these are the only places now open for him to mix with persons of character and fortune: for institutions of this kind make no distinction of persons, but receive indiscriminately, the benefactions of all who offer. Besides, a genius, so ready as his, can turn every action of life to advantage, and extract profit even from giving charity. One instance of this kind of address will prove the justice of this reflection, and show that in every action of his life, he really preserves a consistency of character.

Some years ago, the sea broke over its banks, in a distant part of the kingdom, and not only laid the country waste for a great extent, but also threatened the ruin of the whole, if some means were not immediately applied to put a stop to it. Such an exigence required instant care; the government-sent workmen directly

he severities of the season, in a most inhospitable cli-
mate, to effect their work, it being the depth of winter,
and the danger admitting of no delay.

So severe a service naturally excited the compassion
of this people, the most humane and generous under
Heaven. Accordingly a public subscription was open-
ed, to buy warm clothing for the labourers thus em-
ployed for the advantage of the public, which met with
such general approbation, that a fund sufficient for the
purpose was immediately raised. This person, from the
reason hinted above, was one of the first subscribers,
and appeared most active in promoting the scheme, of-
fering frequently to undertake the most troublesome
part of the conduct of it: But some of them, who were
acquainted with his character, absolutely refused to let
him interfere in any manner that should give him the
least power over the fund. However, as they did not
think proper to make the motives of this caution public,
he took an opportunity one day, when they were indis-
pensably obliged to be absent, to renew his offer, which
his assiduity and success in soliciting subscriptions
gave such weight to, that it was received, and he wa
appointed to purchase and send down some particula
articles, that appeared to be immediately wanted, t
pay for which, five hundred pounds were directly give
into his hands.

This was what he had all along laboured for; accordin
ly, as soon as he received the money, he remitted of
assiduity, and came no more to their meetings, ne
taking the least care about the things, for the purch
of which it had been given to him. So flagrant an
of injustice raised the resentment of every one
cerned; but that he was prepared for, and despi
and, when they required him to return the money
gave them a bill for his own trouble, in whic
charged every step he had ever gone, to solicit and
mote the subscription, and fees of agency for
shilling he had received and paid in the course
by which means he greatly overbalanced their de
Barefaced as such an imposition was, they ha
dress; for he had carefully made his charge a
to the rates of his profession; and, though it
tion of every one to bestow t

as well as their money, without any lucrative view of return, yet, as he had never entered into an actual engagement to that effect, there was now no possibility of defeating his charge.

Such an attempt can never be made with success a second time, as the first instance raises a general alarm. However, he still persists to join in every thing of the kind that is proposed, in hopes of seizing some such lucky opportunity as he did before. But it is easy to foresee that he will be disappointed, for though he exerts himself so strenuously, and takes upon him to offer his advice and direction, as you see, the prejudice against him is so strong, that every thing he says is suspected of design, every thing he proposes rejected, even without examining. Nay, so strong is the detestation of him grown, since this affair of his daughter, that some societies have refused him admission, and others even gone so far as to expel him, in the most ignominious manner, from among them.

CHAP. XXI.

The representation concluded with an eminent m midwife. His motives for taking up that profess with some unfortunate anecdotes of his practice.

I SHALL now present you with a character, the fo of which is a shade to its virtues, and shews th through a medium of ridicule and contempt, m humbling to human vanity, than the most atrocious vi

Observe that skeleton, that figure of famine, w even after a feast looks as if he had fasted for a mon and was just ready to perish for want. That is anot of the principal promoters, and, indeed, supporter public charity, from the best of motives; his benef tions always flowing from the benevolence of his he though too often qualified in the manner, by circu stances that throw both the gift and giver into ridicu

For such is the vehemence of his temper that, satisfied with providing for the wants of the poor, will see that the supplies which he bestows are appli in the manner he directs, which introduces him too miliarly into the domestic distresses of the unhap many of whom would rather perish for want, than m the circumstances of their wants known: nor is his f tune only devoted to those uses, his very personal s vice is always ready, particularly in some cases, whe unfortunately, a motive of a very different nature fr his real one is too liable to be mistaken for it, by malignant temper of the times.

There is no situation of human distress that calls *strongly* for compassion and relief, as child-birth. H *severe then* must the case of those unhappy creatu *be, who* are left to struggle through such pangs, u *sisted,* unprovided with any of the comforts so n *sary to* support nature in such a conflict.

A sense of this struck his humane heart! He *distress,* and liberally supplied the relief. W stopped here! But fearing that such relief

misapplied, or insufficient, he would attend himself, to see that nothing was wanted; and at length, to make his assistance complete, learned the *obstetric* art, and now necessarily has more business in it, as he pays for being employed, by the benefactions he bestows, than any one member of the profession.

Laudable as this care and the motive of it are, it would have been much better, had not the sanguineness of his temper hurried him so far! Had he been content to supply their wants, and let others, whose profession it more immediately is, administer relief. For now, what a field does it open for ill-natured ridicule, to see a man of his consequence descend to offices, in the ordinary acceptation of the word, so far beneath him? How easy is it to say! how easy to be believed, that idle curiosity, or some grosser motive prompts to such uncommon assiduity!

Nor is the evil of this indiscretion confined to him alone; it reflects a kind of ridicule upon the very virtue it would serve; and makes less sanguine minds refrain from the good, for fear they should also share in the reproach.—For it is not sufficient for a man to have the testimony of his own conscience for the rectitude of his intentions; there is also a debt of appearance due to the public, to avoid offence, and inculcate virtue by example.

One instance will illustrate this, and show the inconveniences of his inconsiderate zeal.

A poor woman applied to him for relief some time before the moment. According to his custom, he supplied her necessities, and took a direction where to call and see her. The woman, either mistaken herself, or tempted by distress to deceive him, told him a wrong time, which made him come too soon; and, as he always made her some charitable present whenever he came, she still found some complaints to induce him to repeat his visits.

At length, the frequency of his coming took the notice of the alley in which she lived, who could not conceive any honest business that a gentleman of his fine appearance could have with such a poor woman, in so obscure a place; and, as such remarks are always improved, some *friend* hinted to the woman's husbo

a labouring-man, who was out at his work all day, and therefore could not be witness of his disgrace, that his wife had *many* improper visitors come to her, and must certainly have taken to bad courses, to encourage such doings.

The cuckold in imagination went directly home in the greatest rage at his dishonour; but the name of the visitor, and an assurance that there came no other, soon pacified him, especially as a ready thought struck him that he might turn the good man's humanity to an advantage, of a nature very different from what he designed; for the fellow was well supplied with what is called *mother-wit*, which want had sharpened, and freed from every restraint of honesty. He therefore sullenly told his wife, that it might be so as she said, but he would have a better proof than her word for it, and therefore she must let him see her visitor the next time he came, and, as she valued her life, assent to every thing which he, her husband, should do or say.

The readiness of her consent encouraged him to open his design to her, which her nuptial obedience, and hopes of gain, made her not only give into, but she also improved the scheme to a certainty of success.

The husband, accordingly, having prepared some of his associates, placed them properly, the next time the gentleman went to visit his wife, who immediately, upon his coming into the room, began to *cry out*, and implore his assistance.

Though the business came a little inconveniently upon him, as he was full dressed, he would not desert her in her distress, but directly set about giving her the necessary assistance, in the hurry of which, some unlucky stoop burst the string that tied his breeches behind, and down they fell about his heels.

Though this disaster disconcerted him a good deal, the cries of his patient would not give him time to adjust himself, but he was proceeding in his business, with the most anxious assiduity, when in rushed the husband, with his gang, and rewarded his care with a stroke that felled him, fettered as he was in his breeches, to the ground.

The scene was now changed! the woman, no longer in labour, cried only for revenge, on the base man

had attempted her vartue, as the witnesses present attested, they had heard her before, and now caught him in the very fact; which the posture he was in, and above all, the circumstance of his breeches, too strongly confirmed, to the crowd whom the noise had drawn together.

Terrified almost to death at the threats of the enraged husband, who could hardly be held from taking personal vengeance that very moment, and sensible of the consequence, should public fame catch hold of such a tale, the poor *criminal* threw himself on his knees, and, convinced that all vindication of his innocence would be in vain, besought only a composition for his offence.

This was just what the parties wanted; but still to increase his terror, and enhance the price of his escape, such difficulties were raised, as made him glad to yield to any terms they could impose; and accordingly, he not only purged himself of having done any actual dishonour to her husband, for the intention they would not admit him to controvert, but also made satisfaction to his resentment for the attempt, with 100*l.* for which, as he had not such a sum immediately about him, he gave a draught on his banker, and waited in *duresse*, till the arrival of it released him.

This misfortune made him more cautious for some time; but he begins to forget it now, and goes on *with his business* as before. One thing indeed he takes sufficient care about, and that is, that the waist of his breeches is properly secured: for so strong is the impression, which that accident made upon him, that he never walks a dozen steps without pulling them up.

You see most of them begin to nod, I shall therefore draw the curtain here, and leave them to their nap, with this observation, that a few such examples, as the clergyman, and many of the kind there are, particularly eminent in this exalted virtue of charity, in both the sexes, are sufficient to take off the prejudice which the others must excite, and to preserve the proper respect *to the principles* they propose to imitation.

CHAP. XXII.

Some account of the officers of the charity. The of themselves. They fall out about the division spoil. A terrible uproar is appeased by a dem general concern. The concise manner of passin lic accounts. CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

WHEN I had taken a sufficient view of the g ors, I had leisure to turn my observations to the se of the society, whose behaviour raised an indig too strong to be expressed by words.

If the governors feasted, they paid for their fea but the servants feasted no less, and were paid nor was this enormity confined to this day: their time was one continued scene of it, and much the er part of the contributions of the public was pros to this abominable abuse: while the poor, for wh lief they were given, too often languished in want meanest necessaries, the fund being insufficient fo wants, and the luxury and wages of their servants

I was diverted from these reflections, by an upr one of the private apartments of the house, wher of the superior servants had got together over a b wine, to settle their respective dividends of the su tions of the day. I call them servants, for that proper appellation of all who serve for hire. As yet undisposed of, to any particular person, it in my power, as I told you before, to range t the whole territories of the society, to which I bel and therefore flew to see, what might be the caus riot, in so improper a place, where I was witnes a scene, as almost transcends belief.

At the upper end of the table sat the treasurer, (for it would be a reproach to the poorest society, to have fewer officers than the state) with his accounts before him. After a bumper to the success of the charity, "Mr. steward, (said he) our subscriptions have been so good this year, that I think we may venture to enlarge our salaries a little; for last year they were really scarce worth a gentleman's acceptance."

"That is true, (replied the steward) and I believe we may enlarge the house allowance too, for, upon the present establishment it is hardly enough for the days we meet here, and will not afford any thing to carry home, to entertain a friend with, as a gentleman would desire: it is but swelling some of the *sick articles*, which at present are scarce above the consumption. When I was overseer of the parish, we managed things better. We then lived like gentlemen: nay, I remember when I was church-warden, that we spent an whole summer, jaunting about the country, in pursuit of a gentleman, who had a child sworn to him, for fifty shillings, which he had been ordered to pay, till the bill of our expenses came to 15*l.* and yet nobody could say against it; so that it is our own fault, if we do not live well."

"Right, (joined the apothecary) nor was the appointment for medicines any way sufficient. Had half what the physicians prescribed been given, there would have been nothing to be got by the contract." "How, Mr. apothecary, (returned the cook, with a sneer) nothing to be got! pray, was not all you got clear gain? I am sure, from the benefit received by the patients, there did not appear to have been any thing above brickdust or powder of rotten-post, in any of the stuffs they took!"

"Pray s— s— sir, (stuttered the apothecary, in a rage) wh— wh— what's that you say? who m— m— made you a judge of medicines?" "Not you, I thank God, sir, (said the cook) as my health shows. But I have good reason for what I say; for though I put double the quantity of meat in my broth, I could not prevent the people's dying, nor make the few who recovered, able to go out in twice the usual time. S— s— sir, it is all a d- d- damn'd lie, their d— d— dying was oc-

cationed by the p— p— poorness of the b— b— breath, and the badness of their p— p— p— provisions, and not by the w— w— want of medicines; and I will p— p— prove it, sir: and how you sup—p—p—ported your family on the m— m— meat that should have been d— d— dressed for the sick!" "You will prove it, sir! Take care that you do! Gentlemen take notice of what he says! This is striking at my character; and must affect my bread."

"That is true, Mr. cook, (said the secretary, who had been an attorney's clerk) and whatever strikes at a man's character, so as to affect his bread is actionable." "B— b— but, sir, he attacked my cha— cha— character first, and I'll b— b— bring my action too." "So you may, sir, (replied the lawyer) the action will lie on both sides."

The dispute had hitherto been kept up with such heat that the company could not interpose a word to pacify them, but the mention of the law made it every one's concern in a moment. "Silence, gentlemen, (said the treasurer, raising slowly his august bulk, and striking his hand upon the table) Silence I say, and let me hear no more of this bawling. Mr. cook! Mr. apothecary! what do you both mean? to discover the secrets of our society, and to blow us all up at once? You both heard me say, that every thing, which was wrong, should be adjusted! could you not wait for that, without falling into this indecent, this unprofitable wrangle? As for you, Mr. secretary, the leaven of your profession will break out; it is sufficient to infect the whole mass! Is this your promise, your oath? To follow your business, and do as you are ordered quietly, and implicitly, without meddling any farther, or perplexing us with the tricks of your former trade? But it was in vain to expect it. A lawyer can as well live without food, as without *fomenting* quarrels, and setting his neighbours together by *the* ears: bring an action indeed! and so betray our mystery, to the impertinent remarks of counsellors, and the scoffs of templers and attorneys' clerks. Let me hear one word more of the kind, and this moment I declare off all connexion, and leave every man to shift for himself. Our general oath of secrecy, attested under

hands, secures me from information, as it would invalidate the testimony of us all."

With these words, he turned about, to leave the room, when the steward, catching him by the breast, pulled him into his chair, and holding him down, *by main force*, addressed him thus: "Good God, sir! what do you mean? to take notice of the warmth of madmen, who know not what they say? you, Mr. treasurer, have moved in an higher sphere of life, and ought to be above such things. You were not raised from cleaning the shoes of a pettifogging attorney, in whose drudgery you lost your ears! from being scullion in a nobleman's kitchen, or servant to a mountebank, to dispense his packets to the mob; you were not raised, I say, from any of these stations to the rank of a gentleman, by this office, and should be above taking offence at the lowlived behaviour of such creatures, who know no better." "Nor w— w— w— was I a full-handed ten-times b— b— bankrupt, (interrupted the apothecary, as he would have done sooner, had rage left him power of utterance) that b— b— being unable to get credit any l— l— l— longer, came from cheating the p— p— p— public, to cheating the p— p— p— poor! nor a c— c— c— cast off, worn out p— p— p— pimping footman, whose dirty services w— w— w— were rewarded with this place."

This made the madness general, and they were just going to proceed to blows, when the porter entered hastily, and told them the committee were adjourned to their chamber, and had sent for their accounts, to sit upon them directly.

This brought them all to their senses, and made them friends in a moment. "Gentlemen, (said the treasurer) we have all been too hot, all to blame; but let there be no more of it! let us agree among ourselves, and we may defy the world."

Upon this a general shake of the hand put an end to the whole contest, and they proceeded to business, as if no such thing had ever happened, unanimous in their endeavours to cheat the public, and fatten on the spoils of *the poor*.

By that time the committee had smoked a pipe, and drunk their coffee, the accounts were laid before them, over which they nodded a few moments, and then passed them without exception. The next thing was to pay the salaries of the officers, in which distribution it fell to my lot to be given to the chaplain.

END OF VOLUME ONE.